

Studies in the history of the region west of the Blue Ridge Volume VII, 2003

A Note from the Editors
What Really Happened at Drapers Meadows?
The Evolution of a Frontier Legend —
Ellen Apperson Brown5
The Owners of the Historic Smithfield Manor House —
Wirt H. Wills22
The Strange Campbell/Shelby Controversy and the Role
of John Broady at the Battle of Kings Mountain —
Mason G. Robertson and June N. Stubbs 27
The Preston Cemetery of Historic Smithfield Plantation —
Laura Jones Wedin
The Diaries of James Armistead Otey: 1909 —
James Otey Hoge, Jr
Book Reviews — Tom Costa
<b>Index</b> — Mary C. Holliman

Published by the

Montgomery County Branch

Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities in cooperation with the

Department of History, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University and in conjunction with Pocahontas Press, Inc.

Blacksburg, Virginia

This publication has been made possible through the generous contributions of

First National Bank

Christiansburg, Virginia

The National Bank

Blacksburg, Virginia

The Smithfield Preston Foundation

Ann Gardner Gray

Marcus L. Oliver

Published in cooperation with the

Department of History

Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University

through funding from the

Johnston-Lucinian

Virginia History Research Endowment

# The Smithfield Review

Studies in the history of the region west of the Blue Ridge Volume VII, 2003



Published by the
Montgomery County Branch
Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities
in cooperation with the
Department of History, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University
and in conjunction with Pocahontas Press, Inc.
Blacksburg, Virginia

The Smithfield Review is published annually, in the spring, by the Montgomery County Branch of the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, Blacksburg, Virginia, in cooperation with the Department of History, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, and in conjunction with Pocahontas Press, Inc., Blacksburg, Virginia.

Subscriptions are \$10/year.

ISSN 1093-9652 © 2003 The Smithfield Review

Printed in the United States of America

Pocahontas Press, Inc. Blacksburg, Virginia



Smithfield is an important historic property adjacent to the campus of Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University in Blacksburg, Virginia. The manor house, constructed around 1774 on the frontier, is a premier example of early American architecture and is one of few such regional structures of that period to survive. It was the last home of Colonel William Preston, a noted surveyor and developer of western lands, who served as an important colonial and Revolutionary War leader. Preston named the 2,000-acre plantation "Smithfield" in honor of his wife, Susanna Smith. Today, the manor house is a museum that is interpreted and administered by a local group of volunteers.

In 1997 The Smithfield Review was founded with the purpose of helping to preserve the often neglected history of the region west of the Blue Ridge Mountains in Virginia and adjacent states. We seek articles about important personages and events, reports of archaeological discoveries, and analyses of the social, political, and architectural history of the region. Whenever possible and appropriate, the articles will incorporate letters, speeches, and other primary documents that convey to the reader a direct sense of the past.

# A Note from the Editors

The American frontier in the last half of the eighteenth century was populated by an adventurous group of people, who were subjected to many natural hardships and dangers. Through most of this period, they also had to contend with battles and wars generated by European rivalries, conflicts with Indians, and the American Revolution. The Preston family and the land that eventually became Smithfield Plantation were in the midst of this turmoil and played a significant role in the ensuing drama.

Our first article examines in detail a well-known 1755 event: the Drapers Meadow Massacre and the story of Mary Draper Ingles, her capture, escape, and later life. It is a fascinating tale that has been studied extensively by Virginia Tech graduate student Ellen Brown. The presentation here will provide the reader with new insights into this familiar story.

The existing historic Smithfield manor house was constructed soon after Colonel William Preston began buying the land in 1773. The large house, similar to some found in Williamsburg, contrasted with the nearby frontier log cabins. In a brief note, Wirt Wills, a Smithfield Board member and retired Virginia Tech faculty member, traces the owners of the stately old manor house from the time of its construction until 1959 when it was given to the APVA, its present owner. During that period, it was always owned by Preston descendants or their spouses.

Another well known eighteenth century event was the pivotal 1780 Revolutionary War Battle of Kings Mountain in which a coalition of Whig militias from the mountainous frontier overwhelmed an army of Tories marching north from South Carolina. A descendant of William Preston and a retired medical doctor, Mason Robertson, discovered some old letters that shed new information about a strange controversy arising from that battle. June Stubbs, a Board member of Smithfield and an instructor at Virginia Tech, condensed the research of Dr. Robertson into an interesting essay entitled "The Strange Campbell/Shelby Controversy and the Role of John Broady at the Battle of Kings Mountain."

3

Laura Wedin, a Smithfield Board member, spent many months researching the old Smithfield burying ground that was first used in 1783 upon the death of Col. William Preston, the originator of Smithfield. The cemetery, near the Virginia-Maryland Regional College of Veterinary Medicine on the Virginia Tech campus, is obvious from the Southgate Drive entrance to the Tech campus. It was the scene of numerous burials in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, and it today provides one of the few remaining tangible local links with that era. Many interesting features of the old frontier burying ground are described in "The Preston Cemetery of Historic Smithfield Plantation." Plans are underway to conduct tours of the cemetery, and this article provides ample preparation for such a visit.

Finally, James O. Hoge Jr., a professor of English at Virginia Tech, presents the second segment of the James Otey diaries. This segment begins at the outset of 1909 — about eighteen years after the close of the first part. In the intervening years, James Otey's first wife died and he married a second time. He also lost both parents and seven infant children. The numerous diary entries together with the generous annotations provide an unusually complete insight into daily life a century ago. In years to come, the diaries will be a valuable resource for persons researching Montgomery County history.

This issue also features a review of John Alexander Williams' engaging new book, *Appalachia: A History* by David L. Rouse of the University of Virginia's College at Wise.

The Editors are grateful to Lisa Hammett, Robert Stephenson, Mary Holliman, David Bruce Wallace, and Dr. Peter Wallenstein for their considerable editorial assistance.

— Hugh G. Campbell, Editor Editorial Board: Clara B. Cox Charles E. Modlin Lon K. Savage Charles L. Taylor

# What Really Happened at Drapers Meadows? The Evolution of a Frontier Legend

## Ellen Apperson Brown

Virginia history can lay claim to one of the most dramatic and inspirational captivity stories of all time — that of Mary Draper Ingles' escape from the Shawnee, in the autumn of 1755, and her long walk home through the wilderness. The events of the Drapers Meadows Massacre and of Mary's ordeal have become legendary, establishing her as Virginia's premier colonial heroine. Most of the information we have today about the events at Drapers Meadows comes from two nineteenth century accounts, based on oral history passed down in the Preston and Ingles families. In the 1830s John Ingles, son of William and Mary Ingles, wrote a history of his family based on his parents' accounts. Similarly, in 1843, Letitia Floyd, daughter of William and Susanna Preston, wrote an account of the stories she had heard as a child.

These two family histories differ substantially in content and style, vet both have been generally regarded as authentic and reliable sources of information. After closely examining these two sources, however, we may find it necessary to question their reliability, and wonder if we can ever know what really happened. Although it is certain that Col. James Patton was killed on the day of the attack, there is disagreement about some of the circumstances surrounding his death. We don't know why he was visiting the settlement or whether he had any rangers with him. According to some reports, eight people died, but we have no names for four of them. The Mary Draper Ingles story — of her captivity, her escape from the Indian village in what is now Kentucky, and her long walk home through the wilderness — has been based largely on these two family histories. Although historians generally agree that Mary Ingles was captured by the Shawnee and did survive a long walk home, most of the other details of her story are in dispute. The cause of much of the confusion can be traced back to the two accounts mentioned above.

When John Ingles began his narrative, this is what he wrote as an introduction:

At the repeated solicitations of my relations and friends of which letters in my possession are sufficient evidence, I have consented to write the following short history The application has been made to me as I am the only branch of my Fathers familey now in existance, who knows of the defficulties and sufferings my fathers own familey had to undergo at that early day, in attempting to settle this Western World. Though the greater part of the transactions to which allusion is made happened long before I was born vet having heard them so frequently repeated by my father and mother in my early days they made such deep and lasting impressions on my youthfull mind that they will never be forgotten by me as long as I live and I believe are as fresh in my memory at this day as they ever was, I will therefore endevour to give a short but correct narative of the scens through which they had to pass in their first settling on the Western Watters of Virginia so fare as my recollection serves me at this time that a record of them may be preserved for the gratification of our friends and rising generation, However fabulous or romantick the narative may appear in some of its parts to many persons they are stubborn facts that could have been abundantly established by many witnesses at an earley day it been regired. 1

Letitia Preston Floyd, in a letter to her son in 1843, explained her reasons for writing down the family history:

My dear Rush:

From the extreme rigor of the winter and diminished vision I have postponed answering your letter of Dec. 30<sup>th</sup>, enclosing one from Mr. Lyman C. Draper of Buffalo, N. York. The object of Mr. Draper's letter is to collect material for a work: "Sketches of the Pioneers". Would it be irrelevant in reply to repeat the traditions I have so often interested your childhood with and the facts of the life and death of Col. James Patton?<sup>2</sup>

These two accounts, by John Ingles and Letitia Floyd, both offer descriptions of the attack at Drapers Meadows and of the experiences of Mary Draper Ingles during her captivity and her journey home. Except for a few scattered references to these events in contemporary reports and letters, Ingles and Floyd were the first to put the events of 1755 into

written form. The differences in the two narratives suggest that the Ingles and Preston families had developed distinct oral traditions. By the late nineteenth century, the information from the two families began to merge and become indistinguishable, forming a basis for an ever-expanding legend.

The Preston and Ingles families came into contact at many points throughout the colonial period, with the Preston family eventually settling on land near the Drapers Meadows site, and the Ingles family establishing a home about twelve miles away, at Ingles Ferry, where the Wilderness Road crossed the New River. William Preston and William Ingles both held military and governmental offices during the various stages of county organization, from Augusta to Fincastle, Botetourt and Montgomery, and they both engaged in land speculation in conjunction with the Loyal Land Company. By the early nineteenth century, the children of both families had married and started families of their own. These two family histories offer insights into how the children of Virginia's frontier settlers interpreted their parents' struggles during the French and Indian wars.

First, just to review the basic and fairly indisputable facts, here is a description of the attack at Drapers Meadows, as it appears in a highly respected late twentieth century volume of frontier history:

In the summer of 1755 the Indian depredations begun the fall before, continued along the waters of New River. The settlements on Holston, Reed Creek, and the New River had all been ravaged and it did not seem likely that the group at Draper's Meadows would escape. On July 30, 1755 the Ingleses' cabin was attacked and burned, and Colonel James Patton who was visiting there was killed. Mary Ingles and her children, Thomas and George, became prisoners. Her sister-in-law, Bettie Draper, was wounded and also taken prisoner. Her mother-in-law, Eleanor Draper, and John Draper's infant child were killed. Casper Barger, a neighbor, was killed, and James Cull wounded. Henry Leonard was taken prisoner. William Ingles and John Draper escaped the attack, not being home at the time.<sup>3</sup>

Here is a portion of John Ingles' manuscript concerning the attack at Drapers Meadows:

...there had been severale parteys of the northern Indians, to wit, the Shawneys passed by where my Grandfather lived on their way to the South and wood Commit depredations on the Cawtauba Indians but was still friendley to the Whites at that time however this hapev state of things did not last long the Indians found out that they [M.S. faulty] gratify their Heathan thirst for bloodshead and plunder much nearer Home and at length commenced a warfair on the fronteer settlements & at a time it was little expected a partey of Shawneys fell in upon my fathers familey and an uncles familey John Draper which lived at the same place and killed severale and took the balance prisoners, to wit, my mother and her two children Thos. 4 yrs. & George 2 & Aunt Draper & others. My grandmother Draper being a widow at that time & livin with my father was killed by [M. S. faulty] Col. Patton who was there had a large claim of land in [Blot on M.S.] waters was killed, also, & some other persons not recolected. My mother and her two children. Thos. the older 4 years old, and George abot 2 years old was taken as prisoners also my Aunt Draper who was wounded in her arm and Broke by a Ball which was shot at her in attempting to escape & severale others it so happened they made the attack on their harvest day and although there were severale men at the place the Indians took advantage of attacking the Hows while the men [M.S. faulty] at their work in the harvest field and the field being some distance [M.S. faulty] the howse new nothing of the attack until it was Intirely out of Their power to render any survice to the familey My father when Hearing the allarm run up verry near to the howse thinking perhaps he might render some survice in some way although entierly unarmed the Indians discovering him two stout active Indians took after him with their tomehocks expecting to outrun him and kill him with their tomehocks & was very near affecting their purpose & nothing but a providential act saved him while the Indians were persuing him & gaining on him very fast one on each sid at some distance running through the woods where it was a little thick with brush & undergrowth. fortunately in jumping over a logg fell. The Indians being so eager in persuit over run him my father on rising amediately Tacked back the other way and by that means made his escape as there was no chance for what white men that was there to render any releaf to the prisoners. The Indians securing all the guns they had which was in the howse & so few settlers in the country and them so fare distant apart that They had to abandon all Idea of any farther persuit after them. The Indians went

off entirely unmolested they gathered up their prisoners & plunder and started & steared their course down the New River...4

Notice that John does not go into much detail about the Indians' brutal killings, but he does describe how his father was chased by two warriors and barely escaped being killed. William Ingles would have wanted his son to know that he tried to rescue his family, and he would have also tried to explain, as best he could, about why they had not been better prepared for this attack. John does not describe the death of Col. Patton.

Letitia Preston Floyd describes the Drapers Meadows attack as part of a bigger narrative covering events in the life of her father, William Preston, and of her great uncle, James Patton:

> ...on the 8th July 1755 it being a Sunday a party of Indians came up the Kenawha, thence to Sinking Creek, thence to Strouble's Creek — Inglis & Draper, brothers in law, were living at Solitude, the present seat of Col. Robert T. Preston. The Indians came to Barger's (1/2 mile nearer the Mountain) & cut his head off & put it in a bag; Barger was a very old man then came to Inglis' and Drapers, and killed old Mrs. Draper, two children of Col. Inglis', by knocking their brains out on the ends of the Cabin logs — took Mrs. Inglis and her son Thomas, a boy of ten years of age, prisoners, as well as her sister-in-law Mrs. Draper Jr., who was trying to make her escape with her infant in her arms, but she was shot at by the Indians, who broke her arms by which means the infant was dropped — the Indians picked the infant up, & knocked its brains out agains the Cabin logs — Col. Patton that morning having dressed himself in his uniform, and getting his nephew William Preston to sew up in the fob of his small clothes thirty English guineas, told him to go to Sinking Creek to get Lybrook to help take off the harvest, which was then ready to cut; Preston went very early - After breakfast, Col. Patton sat down to write, the Indian war whoop was heard and five or six of them surrounded the cabin to set it on fire - The Col. always kept his sword on his writing table - he rushed to the door with it in hand and encountered the Indians - Patton was almost gigantic in size – he cut two of the Indians down – in the mean while another warrior had levelled his gun and fired & killed the brave old pioneer – After Patton fell the Indians ran off in the thicket and made their escape before any pursuers

could be brought together – Lybrook & Preston came through the mountains by an unfrequented route, having arrived at Smithfield they found Col. Patton, Mrs. Draper (the mother of Mrs. Inglis) & the (three) children, (and) buried (them); The whole settlement was destroyed; The Indians on their return stopped at Lybrook's, and told Mrs. Lybrook that they had killed two men, one woman and three children, and requested her to look in the bag that they had brought with them, and she would see an old acquaintance, she did so, and immediately recognized the head of Philip Barger who was a very old man — Mrs. Inglis, her oldest son a lad of ten years of age, & Mrs. Draper her sister-in-law, were taken to the Indian towns on the other side of the Ohio River, they travelled down the Kenawha or as it is sometimes called New river, & through the North eastern part of Kentucky.<sup>5</sup>

According to Letitia Floyd, Thomas Ingles was ten years old when he was captured. John Ingles says that Thomas was four, and that his younger brother George was two. Letitia describes the violent manner in which the Indians killed the Drapers' infant, by dashing it against the cabin wall, a detail omitted by John Ingles. Two other children (supposedly children of Capt. Inglis) were killed in the same fashion. She also describes Col. Patton's uniform, his writing desk, and his sword, yet these details do not appear in the Ingles account. Col. Patton's heroic attempt to fight off several warriors is another item that appears only in Floyd's account.

These details suggest that Letitia's knowledge of this important event can be traced (almost exclusively) back to her father. William Preston was present at Drapers Meadows on the morning of the massacre and would have known how his uncle was dressed, although he might not have been sure of the names and ages of the Ingles' children. He did not witness the massacre nor could he have seen William Ingles being chased by two Indian braves. Later that day, he probably did see the dead bodies, so could have described how they had been killed.

Preston died in 1783, when Letitia was only a child of four years. Susanna Preston, Letitia's mother, probably carried on a tradition of story-telling within the Preston family after her husband's death, but she was not a first-hand witness to any of the events. If William Preston thought that three children were killed, who could they have been? George Ingles was carried into captivity along with his brother Thomas. John Ingles

mentioned the death of the Draper baby, but he did not describe any other children being killed.

As far as we know, none of the survivors ever wrote down a detailed description of the attack. The news of the massacre and of the death of Col. Patton, however, spread quickly throughout Virginia and beyond, causing many families to flee to safety. An article appeared in the *Virginia Gazette* on August 8, 1755, announcing that "eight men, women and children" were killed in the massacre and that Colonel Patton "was beset by 16 Indians, who killed and stripped him and then made off with his horse."

Within two weeks of the massacre, Governor Dinwiddie wrote a letter to Col. John Buchanan in which he tried to find someone to blame for the troubles on the frontier:

It is a real Surprise to me that the few Indians who have been in Augusta should have gone to so great Lengths in robbing & murdering Yr. People, when I consider Yr. Numbers, which if they had acted with Spirit and Resolution I think they could have destroyed them all, & protected Yr. Women and Children, but I fancy there has been a general Panick over the whole county, I am sorry the Men you sent after the murderers did not come up with them...

I have done all in my Power for the Service of Yr. County, but if Yr. People will dastardly give up their Families & Interests to a barbarous Enemy without endeavoring to resist them, they cannot expect to be protected, without their own assistance, against these Banditti...<sup>7</sup>

In September of 1755, a London publication (Gentleman's Magazine) published a description of Patton's death. According to this unidentified reporter, Patton:

...rode a little out of the way to see some friends, proposing to overtake the convoy at the end of a few miles, but such was his misfortune that he fell into the hands of some Indians, who had just murdered his friends and their families, and not discovering his danger till it was too late, he was also inhumanely murdered on the spot.<sup>8</sup>

News from the Virginia frontier continued to appear in various publications. In February of 1756, The Pennsylvania Gazette informed its read-

ers about the miraculous escape of a Virginia woman from Indian captivity:

In a letter from Fort Cumberland, dated the Fifteenth Instant, there is Advice, that two considerable Bodies of French Indians have been lately down there, and had picked up several of the Men belonging to the Fort, but that the Commanding Officer there had detached Parties immediately in Pursuit of them, which obliged them to retreat precipitately, and thereby prevented their going among the inhabitants.

It is further added, that one Mrs. Inglis, who was taken Prisoner by the Shawanese when Col. Patton was killed, had made a wonderful Escape from the Lower Shanoe Town, and that she was fourteen Days in the Woods on her Way home, was naked all the Time, and lived on Chestnuts, &c. The Particulars of what Discoveries she made while among them, was not then come to hand.9

The *Pennsylvania Gazette* article is proof that news of Mary's long walk through the wilderness circulated widely throughout the colonies. For a brief time she became a celebrity, especially since she brought back vital information about wilderness geography and about the Shawnee. According to the author of this letter, Mary's trip only lasted two weeks. Other evidence suggests that her journey took 42 days. The key to understanding these inaccuracies lies in discovering their source. If we return to the narratives by John Ingles and Letitia Floyd, we can continue to find significant factual differences. This is how John Ingles described the events following the attack:

The Indians went off entirely unmolested they gathered up their prisoners & plunder and started & steared their course down the New River They made but slow progress in getting on as their way was much Impeded by the thickness of the forrest & undergrowth which covered the whole country However on striking New River they persued on down it. The Indians having several Horses along packed with their plunder which they Had taken & the prisoners mett with considerable Defiqualty in getting on & the prisoners very roughly treated. However from some cause [M.S. faulty] my mother said that they always treated her with more respect [M.S. faulty] aney of the other prisoners and permitted her to ride on one of the horses the greater part of the rod and to carry her children

though my Aunt Draper who had her arm broke was principally put under her cear and my mother had to dress her wound and to procure stuff to dress it and wood frequantly send her off by herself into the woods to Hunt the wild comphisey to put to the broken arm and would be gone a considerable time and said she might had frequent oppertuniteys of leaving them but could not think of leaving her children still Harbouring a hope that they might be persued or they might all be released togeather in some way or Other They still worked on in this way untill they got down some little Distance above the mouth of the great Kanawa They came to a little salt spring in the Bank of the river the Indians stoped there and rested for a day or two there & with what kittles they Had with them boiled & mad some salt They then started on from there & persued this journey until they got to the nation where the Indians lived which was at the mouth of the Bigg Sioto & which took them about one month to performe from the time they were taken untill they arived at the nation.10

John is retelling here his mother's story. Many of these details have become incorporated into her legend. Letitia Floyd's story, however, does not include much information about the captives' trip to the Shawnee villages. William Preston probably did not know anything about that journey, nor did he ever hear Mary Ingles tell about it, so he did not try to describe it to his family. Floyd limits her account of the journey to just one sentence:

Mrs. Inglis, her oldest son a lad of ten years of age, & Mrs. Draper her sister-in-law, were taken to the Indian towns on the other side of the Ohio river, they travelled down the Kenawha or as it is sometimes called New River, & through the North eastern part of Kentucky.<sup>11</sup>

Her lack of information about the captives' journey is not surprising, since her source, William Preston, had no way of knowing what happened after the Indians left Drapers Meadows. There is one very curious detail, however, that does get included in the Preston version of the story. William Preston apparently told his family something about Mrs. Ingles that John Ingles never mentioned. According to the Preston narrative, Mary was pregnant at the time of the attack. If Mary was indeed pregnant, all sorts of questions come to mind. When did she deliver her child? Did it survive? Why did she never mention it to her children and grand-

children? Might she have chosen to abandon her child, knowing that it could not have survived the journey back home?

If William Preston was visiting at Drapers Meadows the morning of the attack, he might have noticed that Mary was expecting a child. Later, he could have mentioned it to his family. This is what Letitia Floyd says about the baby:

In three months after her captivity Mrs. Inglis gave birth to a daughter; her sister-in-law had been traded off to another tribe of Indians as was her son. Three months after the birth of her child Mrs. Inglis determined to run away from the Indians, who were dreadfully cruel to her; another impulse was her great desire to see her husband, which made her undertake a journey unparalleled in the incidents of a Pioneer's life; She and a Dutch woman<sup>12</sup>, who was taken from the upper part of Ohio, determined to escape together from the Indian towns; Mrs. Inglis left her child asleep in a bark cradle, although she was aware that according to Indian character the child would be killed as soon as its mother was missed.<sup>13</sup>

Then Letitia continues with a description of the journey home through the wilderness:

A series of remarkable events occurred to them on the route – Mrs. Inglis keeping up on the water Courses, when she got to the Ohio river, she and the Dutch woman tied logs together with grape vines, thus making a raft on which the two crossed the Ohio river; they were frequently near famishing with hunger, living on blackberries, sassafras leaves, frogs, etc., and in one instance eating a snake they found dead and a raccoon they found in a great state of decomposition - All means failing a proposition was made that they should cast lost [lots] to see which should be eaten by the other; the lot fell upon Mrs. Inglis; who understanding her travelling companion's temper, promised her a sum of money to refrain from killing her; Col. Inglis was a very rich man & this proposition had the desired effect - Mrs. Inglis stepped off, leaving the Dutch woman to find her way as best she could - after many weeks travelling Mrs. Inglis arrived at Inglis ferry on New River the residence of Col. Inglis - She was afterwards the mother of a highly respectable family, who have always been distinguished for bravery and honesty - her grand children live on the place which she made such efforts to return to. These transactions took

place in the year of Braddock's defeat. Mrs. Inglis lived to a very great old age; I remember to have seen her fifty years ago at a large Baptist Convention, thirty miles from her home, she was then (eighty) years old, looked florid and erect.<sup>14</sup>

Notice that Letitia introduces several controversial topics. She says that Mary and the Dutch woman drew straws to see which one would eat the other, and she asserts that Mary chose to abandon her baby, knowing it would probably be killed after she was gone. These two details add to the drama and excitement of a good story, but they tend to portray Mary in a less than flattering way. Many "respectable women" reading this account in the nineteenth century would probably have found Mary's decision, not to mention her courage and independence, somewhat disturbing. What sort of woman would decide to abandon her baby and attempt such a long journey – with no map, no provisions, and very little hope of success? How could anyone be so desperate as to draw straws to see which person would eat the other? Notice, too, that Mary offered a bribe to avoid being eaten. It is hard to miss the fact that Letitia described William Ingles as a wealthy man. Perhaps there was a long-standing rivalry between these two families, for Letitia seems to describe Mary as a notorious character rather than someone to admire.

As far as we know, Mary Ingles never spoke to her friends or her children about having a baby during her captivity, so how did this abandonment story come about? Floyd's rendition does not seem very convincing, especially since the evidence does not agree with her facts. If Mary had a baby after three months in captivity and then chose to escape some three months later, she would have returned to Virginia in late January or early February in 1756. Several other documents prove that Mary arrived home in late November, 1755.

If Mary was not pregnant in July of 1755, then Letitia may be responsible for inventing the story to add a little drama and controversy to her tale. If Mary was pregnant, and William Preston noticed, then Letitia (or someone else in her family) is perhaps responsible for embellishing the pregnancy possibility with a plausible, yet scandalous, story line. There are only a few other individuals who would have known whether Mary was pregnant at the time of the attack. William Ingles would have certainly known, as would Bettie and John Draper. It is possible that Mary and William decided to keep silent and never mentioned the baby, but Bettie Draper, who returned to Virginia after six years in captivity, could

have told stories to her own family, including all the details about the trip to Ohio. This is a mystery that might not ever be resolved.

All we can say for certain is that Letitia Floyd mentioned the pregnancy in her letter to Lyman C. Draper, a historian who collected documents of frontier history. Copies of this letter were made and circulated to a wide audience. In 1850, the Rev. William Henry Foote published Historical and Biographical Sketches of Virginia in which he describes "The Captivity and Escape of Mrs. Inglis in 1756." Foote borrows heavily from John Ingles' account, but he apparently was not familiar with Floyd's manuscript and made no mention of the baby. Unfortunately, Foote did not list his sources, so we cannot know what letters and other written documents he used.

By 1886, one of Mary Ingles' great-grandsons, John P. Hale, published a book about frontier history, entitled *Trans-Allegheny Pioneers*: Historical Sketches of the First White Settlements West of the Alleghenies, 1748 and After. Hale names several of his sources, including the Rev. Foote and Letitia Preston Floyd, and he mentions the difficulties he faced in trying to find documents concerning frontier history:

As so few facts and dates have been preserved in relation to the Ingles-Draper frontier settlement, owing, in great measure, to the fact above stated, that but few records were written in those days, owing to disinclination and the disadvantages under which they labored, and to the additional fact that, a few years later, their houses were burned, and all books, papers, and documents of every sort were destroyed, every collateral fact that helps to fix dates, or throws other light upon the subject becomes of interest.<sup>15</sup>

One of the sources he cites is Mrs. Governor John Floyd, and he particularly credits her with information about the "ill-fated babe":

The particulars of the eventful history of this ill-fated babe I get from a short sketch of Mrs. Ingles' captivity, together with facts relating to the early settlements of the Pattons and the Prestons, written by Mrs. Governor John Floyd, nearly a half century ago. Mrs. Floyd was a Preston, born and reared at Smithfield, so that she and Mrs. Ingles were near neighbors, and it is probable that she received the facts related, from Mrs. Ingles direct.<sup>16</sup>

This is how John Hale described the attack at Drapers Meadows:

On the 8<sup>th</sup> of July, 1755, being Sunday, and the day before Braddock's memorable defeat, near Fort Du Quesne, when all was peace, and there was no suspicion of harm or danger, a party of Shawanees, from beyond the Ohio, fell upon the Draper's Meadows settlement and killed, wounded, or captured every soul there present, as follows:

Colonel James Patton, Mrs. George Draper, Casper Barrier and a child of John Draper, killed; Mrs. John Draper, James Cull, wounded; Mrs. William Ingles, Mrs. John Draper, Henry Leonard, prisoners.

Mrs. John Draper, being out of doors, a short distance from the house, first discovered the enemy approaching, and under circumstances indicating hostile intent.

She ran into the house to give the alarm and to get her sleeping infant. Taking the child in her arms she ran out on the opposite side of the house and tried to make her escape. The Indians discovered her, however, and fired on her as she ran, breaking her right arm, and causing the child to fall. She hastily picked it up again with her left hand and continued her flight. She was soon overtaken, however, and made a prisoner, and the child brained against the end of one of the house logs. The other Indians, meanwhile, were devoting their attention to other members of the families and camp, with results in killed, wounded, and captured, as above stated.<sup>17</sup>

John Hale relates that Mary was "nearly approaching a period of maternity," and that she gave birth to a child three days after leaving Drapers Meadows:

On the night of the third day out, the course of nature, which waits not upon convenience nor surroundings, was fulfilled, and Mrs. Ingles, far from human habitation, in the wide forest, unbounded by walls, with only the bosom of mother earth for a couch, and covered by the green trees and the blue canopy of heaven, with a curtain of black darkness around her, gave birth to an infant daughter. 18

Like Letitia Floyd, Hale believed that Mary chose to abandon her baby, assuming it could not survive the long journey home. This is his passage from *Trans-Allegheny Pioneers*:

Mrs. Ingles had been tried as few women are, but now the supreme moment of her life was upon her. To try to escape, she

had determined; but what was to be done with her child? She knew well that if she attempted to take it with her, its cries would betray them both to recapture and death. And, even if she should possibly escape recapture, she knew too well what she would have to encounter and endure to suppose for a moment, that it was possible to carry the infant and succeed in her effort. Clearly there was but one thing to do, under the circumstances, and that was to abandon the unhappy little sufferer to its hard fate.

Who can conceive of the agony of a young mother compelled to decide such a question, and to act, with such alternatives before her? But Mrs. Ingles was a woman of no ordinary nerve. She did decide and act, and who will say that she did not decide wisely? Certainly, in the light of subsequent events, her decision and action were wise and fortunate.

She nestled the dear little babe as cosily as she could in a little bark cradle, gave it her last parting kisses and baptism of tears, tore herself away, and was gone, never to see it again in this world, and knowing, or having every reason to believe, that it would be murdered so soon as it was known that she was gone.<sup>19</sup>

Hale's book was a huge success in the late nineteenth century, perhaps in part because the public was becoming interested in romantic versions of colonial history. *Trans-Allegheny Pioneers* has been embraced by many as the authentic source for Mary Draper Ingles' story. Only a few historians in the twentieth century have remained skeptical about Hale's narrative, preferring to depend on John Ingles as the most reliable source. The great majority of storytellers, however, have found the baby episode hard to resist, and they have incorporated many of Floyd's contributions, including her description of Col Patton's heroic struggle with the Shawnee braves. Many historians assert the reliability of their information by citing both John Hale and Letitia Floyd as evidence of their thorough research.

For thirty years in Radford, Virginia, audiences have seen the Drapers Meadow Massacre reenacted in the outdoor drama *The Long Way Home*, by Earl Hobson Smith, assuming, but not knowing for certain, that the story being told is historically accurate.

In 1981, James Alexander Thom published the story in the form of a historical novel entitled *Follow the River*. This is a book that is hard to put down, and it has become required reading in the West Virginia eighth grade curriculum. In Thom's novel, Mary demonstrates her courage and spirit early in the story, as the Indians make their violent attack:

In that awful silence the warrior, pirouetting triumphantly and holding the baby high overhead, its smashing skull dribbling blood on him, turned to find another white woman, this one big with child, standing on a doorstep five feet from him with a cocked rifle aimed straight at his eyes. He froze. His mouth dropped open. Baby blood was spotting the ochre and blue paint on his face.

Mary pulled the trigger.

The hammer clicked. The gun did not fire.

She remembered then that Will always left the barrel loaded, but the firing pan uncharged, when he hung up the gun.

"No," she groaned.20

Follow the River, even though it does not claim to be historically accurate, creates an incredibly convincing narrative, replete with dialogue and many new characters. Thom makes good use of his familiarity with and respect for the Shawnee culture. Few people can read Thom's book without becoming convinced that Mary had a baby. In this closing scene, after William and Mary have been reunited, the novel offers an explanation why Mary never told her children about their little sister. Soon after Mary returns to Virginia, she and William are talking over what has happened:

And then he said: "Now, Mary, y'know there's one big matter y've not told me yet. Let's get it over with, while there's just us two t'hear it."

She leveled her gaze at him and set her jaw and squinted against the wind and the winter sun behind him, or against whatever would be in his eyes when she told him. "She was born on th' ground three days after th' massacre," Mary said. She saw his eyes moisten and saw his lips forming the silent word she. "I toted an' suckled 'er three months. Then..." Her gaze fell and her brow knitted.

"What?" he said. He thought the wind had blown her words away.

"...Then," she said, looking defiantly at her husband, braced for whatever he might say, "...then I had to leave 'er with a nurse squaw. Or she'd 'a perished, as y' can see by th' sight o' me." There. She had dared to say it.

A blast of wind buffeted her ears and the hood of her cape and Will had to reach up and hold his hat to keep it on his head. He stared at her, and finally he said:

"And did y' give this girleen a name?"

"Aye. But you oughtn't t' know it. I intend to forget, quick as I can."

He sat there and looked at her. She did not know how he was going to take this. Finally, he said:

"As it should be." His mouth was firm and the tears in the corners of his eyes could as well have been from the cold gale.<sup>21</sup>

For the sake of any historians who may still be trying to put this controversy to rest, there is one more intriguing bit of evidence to add to the debate. In 1984, a man named William Waddell wrote a letter to Roberta Ingles Steele (a descendant of Mary Draper Ingles) and told her about a copy of a book he owned, one of the first editions of *Trans-Allegheny Pioneers*. He explained that Mrs. Malinda Charlton, one of Mary's grandchildren, and a child of John Ingles, had written a note inside the cover of the book, in which she objected to Hale's inclusion of the baby,

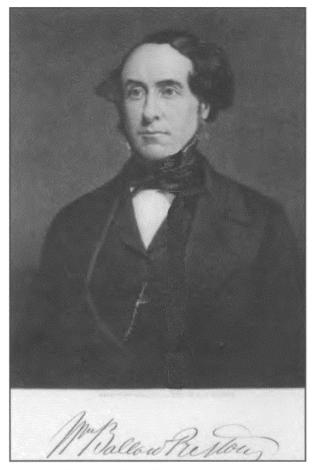
...saying that she had heard her Grandmother tell the story "times without number" and "never as much as a hint of such an occurrence." About the birth of the baby girl she says, "There is no reference made to any such event in the sketch written by my father."<sup>22</sup>

Each succeeding generation interprets history differently, influenced by changes in politics and culture. To understand the history of events 250 years ago, a historian must be a good detective and consider all the possible ways that stories can become distorted over time. The Preston and Ingles family histories both offer intriguing evidence that the original storytellers had distinct points of view and were influenced by different motives. The Drapers Meadow Massacre is an unusually interesting example of history as an evolving story, and a reminder of the difficulties historians (and eye-witnesses) face in trying to give accurate and unbiased reports.

## **Endnotes**

- 1. John Ingles, Escape from Indian Captivity: The Story of Mary Draper Ingles and Son Thomas Ingles as told by John Ingles, Sr., eds. Roberta Ingles Steele and Andrew Lewis Ingles (Radford, 1969), 5. This passage preserves the spelling and punctuation found in John Ingles' manuscript, as transcribed in 1934 by Dr. Virginia Hudson.
- 2. Letitia Preston Floyd, "Letter to her son Rush, February 22, 1846." Filson Club Historical Society, Louisville, Kentucky.

- 3. Mary B. Kegley and F. B. Kegley, Early Adventures on the Western Waters. Vol. I: The New River of Virginia in Pioneer Days, 1745–1800 (Orange, Virginia: Green Publishers, 1980). 352.
- 4. Ingles, 7-9.
- 5. Letitia Preston Floyd, "History of the Preston Family," The Smithfield Review, vol. 1 (1997): 7-8.
- 6. Patricia Givens Johnson, James Patton and the Appalachian Colonists (Verona, Virginia: McClure Printing Company, 1973), 204.
- 7. Conway Howard Smith, *The Land That is Pulaski County* (Pulaski, Virginia: Pulaski County Library Board, 1980), 25-26.
- 8. Patricia Givens Johnson, *The New River Early Settlement* (Pulaski, Virginia: Edmonds Printing, Inc., 1983), 117.
- 9. The Pennsylvania Gazette, February 26, 1756, in Accessible Archives Search and Information Server, Pennsylvania Gazette, item #19248, under http://srch.accessible.com/accessible/text/gaz2/00000192/00019248.htm
- 10. Ingles, 9-10.
- 11. Floyd, 8-9.
- 12. The woman was actually German, but many Virginians lumped Germanspeaking people together under the term "Dutch."
- 13. Floyd, 8-9.
- 14. Floyd, 9.
- John P. Hale, Trans-Allegheny Pioneers: Historical Sketches of the First White Settlements West of the Alleghenies, 1748 and After (Cincinnati: The Graphic Press, 1886), 25.
- 16. Hale, 36.
- 17. Hale, 29-30.
- 18. Hale, 35.
- 19. Hale, 44.
- James Alexander Thom, Follow the River (New York: Ballantine Books, 1981),
   10.
- 21. Thom, 386.
- 22. Malinda Charlton, note inscribed in *Trans-Allegheny Pioneers*, c. 1886: copy of letter is property of Roberta Ingles Steele, of Radford, Virginia.



William Ballard Preston (1805-1862)

An engraving by A.H. Ritchie of a daguerreotype by Brady. Signed "Wm Ballard Preston". He had a distinguished career: he was a delegate and a senator in the Virginia General Assembly, a United States congressman, Secretary of the Navy, and a Confederate senator. (Photograph courtesy of Aubin Boulware Lamb, younger son of Janie Preston Boulware Lamb.)



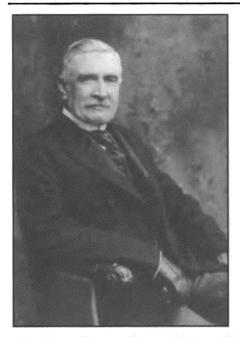
Smithfield Manor House, circa 1903

# The Owners of the Historic Smithfield Manor House

#### Wirt H. Wills

Visitors to Smithfield often ask questions about the ownership of the Smithfield manor house after its construction. Those questions are often answered by saying that only Prestons owned the house until it was given to the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities (APVA) in 1959. This brief article will identify all of its owners, and a longer article in a future issue of this journal will describe the history of William Preston's entire Smithfield land holdings until the present.

The manor house of Smithfield was constructed in the mid 1770s by Colonel William Preston on land that he purchased in 1773. His will, made in 1777 and proved in 1783, listed 1860 acres in the Smithfield estate. Smithfield was inherited by his fourth son, James Patton Preston, who was the first child known to be born at Smithfield and who later became Governor of Virginia. Col. William Preston's widow, Susanna





Left: Aubin Lee Boulware (1843–1897), the husband of Jane Grace Preston. They resided in Richmond at 1 East Franklin Street (now demolished). He was an educator, lawyer, and banker, and an original director of the Southern Railway. During the War he served with the 9th Virginia Cavalry, C.S.A. Right: Jane Grace Preston (1849–1930), called "Janie". She married Aubin Lee Boulware on 14 November 1878 at Smithfield. She was the mother of Janie Preston Boulware Lamb, who gave Smithfield to the APVA in 1959. (Photographs courtesy of Brockenbrough Lamb, Jr., older son of Janie Preston Boulware Lamb.)

(Smith) Preston, retained a right to residence there by terms of William's will, and she resided there until her death in 1823.<sup>2</sup>

Governor Preston prospered, and by 1843 when he died, he had accumulated approximately 3,000 acres of Smithfield land,<sup>3</sup> including the parts later known as Solitude and White Thorn.

Upon the division of the land among the heirs of James Patton Preston, the oldest son, William Ballard Preston, inherited the Smithfield manor house. Three years after William Ballard Preston's death in 1862, approximately 994 acres of land were divided by the commissioners of his estate into six parcels, one for each of his five surviving children and a dower parcel of 270 acres to be held for the use of his widow, Lucy



Lucinda Staples Redd Preston (1819– 1891). She married William Ballard Preston on 21 November 1839. (courtesy of Aubin Boulware Lamb)

(Redd) Preston.<sup>5</sup> The house, always central to the history of Smithfield, was on the dower lands, and Lucy Preston resided there until her death in 1891.<sup>6</sup>

One of William Ballard Preston's heirs was his daughter. Jane Grace Preston, who married Aubin Lee Boulware, a lawyer from Richmond, in 1878 at Smithfield.<sup>7</sup> After a series of purchases, the two of them possessed the entire dower parcel and three of the five parcels left to her and her siblings. Details of these acquisitions will be described in a subsequent article. After the death of A. L. Boulware in 1897, his widow Jane Boulware, in 1904, placed Smithfield in a trust for her lifetime use and benefit with a provision that, upon her death, the remainder of the trust would pass to her three children.8 Apparently without having disposed of any land, Jane Boulware died in 1930. During the period of the trust, the house was often rented, and sometimes was vacant. Occasionally, some former inhabitants return as visitors with stories of days long ago when they lived in the house. One of her sons died in 1924 without heirs, and the other son in 1956, intestate and without issue.9 At that point the entire Smithfield property, including the house, descended to Janie Preston (Boulware) Lamb, the last survivor, and the trust was dissolved.

Smithfield was then parceled into twelve unequal parts. and a central parcel of 4.65 acres including the house (Parcel XI), was deeded by Janie Preston (Boulware) Lamb to the APVA in 1959. Heirs of Mrs. Lamb deeded an adjoining parcel of more than seven acres to the APVA in 1979 (Parcel XII). The other surrounding parcels were sold to the Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University in a series of transactions, leaving the last remains of the estate as the historic old manor house on about 12 acres of land surrounded by Virginia Tech property. 10



Mrs. Janie Preston (Boulware) Lamb, last private owner of Smithfield. (Photo of a portrait at Smithfield, courtesy of Teri Hoover.)

## **Endnotes**

- 1. Montgomery County Circuit Court Records, Montgomery County Will Book B, pp. 55-61.
- 2. John Frederick Dorman, The Prestons of Smithfield and Greenfield in Virginia (Louisville, Kentucky: The Filson Club, 1982), p. 13.
- 3. Montgomery County Circuit Court Records, Montgomery County Deed Book I & J, p. 404.
- 4. Montgomery County Will Book 10, p. 116.
- 5. Montgomery County Will Book 10, p. 116.
- 6. Dorman, p. 261.
- 7. Dorman, p. 264.
- 8. Montgomery County Deed Book 51, p. 445.
- 9. Montgomery County Deed Book 274, p. 183.
- Montgomery County Deed Book 421, p. 268; Plat 9-205; Montgomery County Deed Book 274, p. 183; Plat 4-45.

# The Strange Campbell/Shelby Controversy and the Role of John Broady at the Battle of Kings Mountain

Mason G. Robertson and June N. Stubbs\*

Through reading the contents of a letter dated 1822,1 which I found in a family album<sup>2</sup> of my uncle. Robert Bowver Preston of Greenfield in Fincastle, Botetourt County, Virginia, I became interested in the reference it contained to another letter from James McDowell. I discovered that McDowell's letter revealed information about a controversy concerning the Revolutionary War Battle of Kings Mountain (October 7, 1780). The controversy, which challenged the veracity of Colonel William Campbell's (1745–1781) fame as the commander-in-chief of the patriot troops, arose some thirty years after the battle. Some persons speculated that Campbell had been sitting on his horse safely at the rear of his troops during the battle rather than leading his soldiers in battle at the front, as had been officially recorded. The key challenger to Campbell's record was another officer who took part in the battle, Colonel Isaac Shelby, who later became the first (1792–1796) and the fourth (1812– 1816) governor of Kentucky. Basic to the battlefield controversy was the presence of William Campbell's look-alike mulatto manservant, John Broady (also Broaddy or Broddy).

The controversy assumes importance when one considers that the Battle of Kings Mountain on the border between North and South Carolina near Charlotte is considered by historians to be a key battle that paved the way to victory for the American patriots in the Revolutionary War, much as the Battle of Gettysburg did for the Union during the Civil War in 1863. The objective student of history might well ask, "What was Cornwallis doing in the South in the first place?" To better understand the Campbell/Shelby controversy, a review of that controversy and of the Battle of Kings Mountain, along with John Broady's role, will allow the perspicacious reader and student of history to draw his/her own conclusions as to what may have occurred.

# The Controversy

It came as a considerable surprise to me when I discovered that the aforementioned letter challenged not only Campbell's role as chief commander but also his bravery and military judgment, and by none other than Col. Isaac Shelby, whose North Carolina regiment from Sullivan County had flanked Campbell's much larger contingent from Virginia at the Battle of Kings Mountain. The family album in which my search began belonged to my uncle Robert Bowyer Preston of Greenfield Plantation in Botetourt County. Greenfield was one of the early homes of Col. William Preston (1729-1783). Built in 1763, Greenfield was the birthplace of six<sup>3</sup> of Col. William and Susanna Smith Preston's twelve children, including their son Francis Preston (1765–1835), who later practiced law in Abingdon and married Sarah Buchanan Campbell in 1793 when she was fifteen years old. Sarah was the only daughter of General William Campbell and his wife, Elizabeth, a sister of Patrick Henry. (The only son of General Campbell, Charles Henry Campbell, died at the age of five.) The 1822 letter, written by James McDowell (1770–1835), was addressed to Francis Preston of Abingdon, Virginia. McDowell was a brother-in-law of Francis Preston, having married Preston's sister, Sarah, who was also born at Greenfield. The McDowells built Col Alto, 4 a home that still stands today in Lexington, Virginia. At the time he wrote the letter. McDowell was staying at the home of his wife's sister. Susanna Preston Hart (also born at Greenfield), and her husband Nathaniel Hart. in Danville, Kentucky. Excerpts from the letter follow:

> Francis Preston, Abingdon, Virginia Oct. 16, 1822

...Last week I was at Danville when Col. Shelby<sup>5</sup> came to see me (as I believe he was introduced) [re] Willm's<sup>6</sup> publications and regretted extremely that his letters to Sevier<sup>7</sup> had been published considering them as the foundation or rather cause of Wms publications. He said yourself and Genl Campbell were both particularly respected by him and that you were doubly endeared to him by being the descendant of the man of all others he loved the most. That the publication had placed Genl Campbell on the highest penicle [sic] & there he was content he should remain & that he would not answer unless he was forced to do so by some further attack. If this thing were permitted to remain where it is now was that he was content however goading to his feelings some of the charges to bear it but

that if he was forced he must and would defend himself. He spoke of some of the matters of Wm Pierce. The appointment of Genl Campbell to the command & the time of drawing up the acct of the Battle to which William refers. He says the appointment of Genl Campbell to the command met his views and that he aided it with his influence and that he was the first to motion it to the officers of the expedition and that report of the disposition of the army on the day of the Battle and forces ... paper was drawn up by himself some days after the battle on their reaching the first place of safety that the report as drawn up by himself was shown to Genl Campbell who suggested several alterations and amendments which were made on the face of the paper and which he cheerfully adopted & concurred in & then the report in the form it is now seen was made by himself. I told Genl Shelby I would communicate this to William and yourself. He said I might do so as one happening between him & myself & Mr. Hart<sup>8</sup> without any intention that you should hear it. It is said that Genl Shelby has written an account of the affair and has sworn to it lately in Danville to be left behind him & that his friends are collecting testimony to disprove William's publications. At this time the current is running against Shelby greatly.

## ...James McDowell

Further research turned up two pamphlets by Agnes Graham Sanders Riley of Lexington, Kentucky that deal with the origins of the Campbell/Shelby controversy. The author bases the publication of the pamphlets on the race for governor of Kentucky in which Shelby, who was seeking a second term, had formidable competition from a prominent lay leader in the Baptist Church of Kentucky. The main issue centered around the need for a strong man with military experience as governor because war with Great Britain seemed imminent (War of 1812). Against Shelby were his age, wealth, and religion. His wealth, like that of other militia leaders of the over-mountain men in the Revolutionary War, had been primarily gained from land speculation. Many had become enormously wealthy upon winning that war; they were almost to a man staunch Presbyterians of Scots-Irish descent. There can be little doubt that Shelby focused on his trump card, his military experience. The trouble was, he apparently overplayed it. Why? Perhaps he sincerely believed that Campbell did not deserve his fame as the leader of the Battle of Kings

Mountain and, once deciding that, it was natural that he would then prepare a pamphlet or "lawyer's brief" citing evidence that all of the important decisions and actions of the battle were to the credit of others, especially himself, rather than to Campbell.

In addition, several other documents attest to Shelby's repeated efforts to justify himself. An article signed "Narrator" appeared in *The Reporter*, Lexington, Kentucky, July 25, 1812; interviews of 1815 and 1819 by General Martin D. Hardin were published by Hardin's son in *The American Review* in 1848; and Shelby himself published a pamphlet in 1823.<sup>10</sup> The evidence seems to suggest that early in the debate and during his gubernatorial campaign, Shelby's focus was on his own role at the battle, but after the election was over and for many years thereafter the focus was instead on denigrating Campbell.

Imagine my delight when I found among the Preston Family Papers at the Virginia Historical Society in Richmond, Virginia, a letter from Francis Preston Blair to General Francis Preston of Abingdon, dated June 1823 (nine months after the McDowell letter), also discussing the controversy over the Battle of Kings Mountain. Francis Preston Blair (1791–1876) was the son of a niece of Col. William Preston, Elizabeth (Smith) Blair (1762–1818), who was once the owner of Blair House in Washington, D.C. His mother and Francis Preston of Abingdon (1765–1835) were first cousins and close in age to one another. It appears that Francis Preston Blair was named for Francis Preston of Abingdon since he used "namesake" in the letter's signature. In Blair's letter to Gen. Francis Preston, he praised the publications of William Campbell Preston.

Frankfort [Ky.], June 23, 1823

Dear Sir,

Perceiving by the state papers that you design publishing additional evidence disproving the charges advanced by Gov. Shelby against the reputation of Col. Campbell, I presume it will not be uninteresting to you to obtain any new details in relation to the controversy. Mr. Estill of Augusta, VA can furnish you with the most conclusive testimony of the strong impression which Major Edmunston, his step-father who was entertained of the heroic bravery displayed by Col. C at the Battle of Kings Mountain. I recently traveled with Mr. Estill from the Southern part of this state on his return from Tennessee when he repeated to me that statements he had heard Major Edmunston make & he also informed me that he had heard a Mr. Maxwell who

served under Shelby now living about 30 miles from Nashville on the road to Alabama who told him he was present and officiated at the execution of the Tories, that he did not hear nor did he ever hear of, at the time, insulting taunts said to have been used by Sevier to Campbell. You will have it in your power to inform yourself more particularly in regard to the circumstances, as Mr. Estill on his return home will pass through Abingdon with a view of seeing a brother who lives there.

You will have observed that the E[ditors] of the "Argus" and "Reporter" in giving your own nam[e] & the reply of your son, William, to Gov. Shelby's publications, have thought fit to accompany them by editorial remarks designed to anticipate their effect upon the public mind. From this circumstance you will perceive that the editors of these influential papers will do their utmost to support Gov Shelby in his injustice particularly the editor of the Argus, who by publishing Gov Shelby's reply, without giving the defense to which it was a response & by threatening you with a multitude of assailants should you put forth the vindication you have promised has sufficiently indicated as well the feeling by which he is actuated as the principle on which [he] acts. The Communicator, another paper published in this place of considerable circulation has given proofs of hostility to the cause you support. You must not however consider the attitude the editors of these leading papers have expressed as proceeding from the motive which generally rules them & desire to accommodate their sentiments to the palates of the people they are endeavoring to lead the public opinion, & the more willingly undertake as they expect support from the general inclination which the people always exhibit of identifying themselves with a distinguished fellow citizen or even a distinguished ... against an antagonist of another state. But there are private causes which operate on each & originate the zeal which has been manifested by them. The Editor of The Reporter is married into the family of the Harts. The Communicator in fact (though ostensibly) is edited by a gentleman whose brother married a daughter of Governor Shelby and the editor of the Argus is greatly under the influence of an able amiable citizen of this place who was aide to Shelby during the war who is thought as certainly to have aided him in his reply & whose brother is the reputed author of the piece signed "Narrator." You will not therefore attribute the holy fever which the zealous editors evince for their idol Gov. Shelby as the result of general enthusiasm among the people. I doubt not but that the justice of your cause will triumph over the influence of narrow, selfish, sectional feeling. I believe that all those among us who know anything of our revolutionary struggles (Shelby's particular clan apart) look upon his conduct in regard to Col. Campbell as sacrilege and it cannot be that the people of our brave and generous state, however they might be influenced to preserve ["support" crossed out] their own, by supporting the glory of an individual who has given his honor to the public by the public stations to which he has allied them would yet be willing to mar the heroic death with a view to enhance them. They will rather, I trust, deeply resent the conduct of that man who after having enjoyed the honor & emoluments of public stations & obtained all the real advantages by an act of survivorship which the exploit of Kings Mountain would have conferred on Campbell had he lived would now use the very consideration thus desired not only to take from the great acclaim the fame which follows his recovery but would inscribe coward on the hero's urn & give the opprobrium an inheritance of shame to his posterity.

Shelby has passed lightly over his autographed letter but some of his friends here deny its existence & others say the contents would explain away the paragraph quoted by your son, William. I think it would probably be well to publish the whole & send it to where it could be identified as his own. It might be most powerfully used against him & therefore should be exhibited at full length and the contrast between it and his present statements dwelt upon so that the motive which produced his contradiction would be made to seize the public attention.

The attack threatened by the Argus will not deter you from doing justice to the cause in which you are engaged. It is a cause in which we know can be lost but in its desertion. Should the partisans of Shelby in my neighborhood pursue the subject in the public print in a way not requiring your interposition but yet describing animadversions from the effect they may appear to produce on the public mind, be assured, I will not hesitate at whatever hazard to invoke the public justice to indicate as far as I can the views of Col. Campbell & your own character and conduct should it become a part of the contro-

versy. Nothing could give me [more] pure satisfaction than to be somewhat instrumental in bringing justice to the memory of Col. Campbell if you should believe that the peculiar interest I take in this matter it is some part increased by the kindness shown by yourself & Mrs. Preston to my mother & the tender regard you gave to the infancy of one who through life will feel the obligation.

Your af[fectionate] kinsman and namesake

E. P. Blair

It would be worthwhile at this point to review briefly the Battle of Kings Mountain.

## The Battle of Kings Mountain:

Having failed to suppress the rebellion of the colonists in the North by 1780. Sir Henry Clinton, over-all commander of the British military in America, conceived a plan to sweep through the South, beginning with the capture of Savannah and Charleston. From there, the British would drive north, gaining strength along the way by drafting the many Tory sympathizers to the King who were known to reside in the South, especially among the Scots of North Carolina. To this group of soldiers would be added rebel Whigs pressed into service against their wills. What upset the grand strategy? As anyone who has celebrated the October 7, 1780 Battle of Kings Mountain would know, Col. William Campbell of Abingdon, Virginia, led 400 Virginia mountain men south to meet with other mountain men from Georgia and North and South Carolina at Sycamore Shoals on the Watauga in what is now Tennessee. They gathered a total force of fifteen hundred men for the purpose of crossing the mountains to meet and destroy the equally-numbered forces of Major Patrick Ferguson, an arrogant British leader who had threatened to inflict harsh punishment on the mountain people if they did not submit to King George III's will. According to the British plan, Ferguson was to sweep the western or left flank of the British northward through the South while Cornwallis with his main forces kept to the center, and a third column moved from Charleston to Wilmington, North Carolina, along the coast. Important to a further understanding of events is the fact that Cornwallis and Ferguson were fresh from a victory over the rebel Continental forces, first at Charleston against General Lincoln, and then at Camden, South Carolina, on August 16, 1780, where they had defeated General Horatio Gates, the "hero of Saratoga," who for a brief time had been considered as a replacement for George Washington. Gates had retreated to Hillsboro, North Carolina, just south of the Virginia line, to regroup.

No Continental forces made up of trained army regulars were left in the South to stop the British march northward. What Cornwallis now faced, overconfidently and somewhat contemptuously, were undisciplined militiamen, "a scurvy lot of ragamuffins," under the nominal command of rebel colonial governors rather than the Continental Congress. What leadership these troops had consisted of naturally self-selected men such as Isaac Shelby and John Sevier, both from North Carolina counties west of the Allegheny Mountains. Officially, county militia were under the command of local "county lieutenants." A few militiamen — such as Daniel Morgan, the hero of the Battle of Cowpens — joined the Continentals under Congressional command and rose in rank as they proved their worth. The unorthodox fighting tactics of these men were especially held in contempt by the regulars, both British and American, despite the experience in 1763 of the ill-fated General Braddock. The overmountain men in the militia had been in more or less constant warfare with the Indians since the 1750s; as a result these pioneers had become adept at unorthodox fighting tactics.

After the fall of Charleston in May 1780, Major Ferguson with just one hundred regulars set up headquarters to train his Tory volunteers in a town called Ninety-Six, South Carolina. Emboldened by British victories, the Tories flocked to Ferguson's call to arms. They raided the homes and farms of their rebel Whig neighbors to supply the needs of Ferguson's army. Small armies of Whig patriots, some refugees and others avengers, formed to strike back. Among the first Whig patriots to confront Ferguson were Elijah Clarke of Georgia and Col. Joseph McDowell, Jr., of Quaker Meadows, North Carolina. McDowell feared that the British were a threat to western North Carolina. Accordingly, he sent for Isaac Shelby and John Sevier of Sullivan and Washington Counties to rally volunteers from the over-the-mountain regions of the Watauga and Holston Rivers to reinforce his men at Cherokee Ford on the Broad River. For a time. they were successful, defeating portions of Ferguson's army on the Pacolet River, at Thicketty Fort, Musgrove's Mill, Cedar Spring, and the Wofford Iron Works near present-day Spartanburg. But their success was thwarted by the news of Gates's disastrous defeat at Camden, and the patriots

were forced to retreat back over the mountains. As a result, Cornwallis was emboldened to order even harsher measures against all rebels: hanging, imprisonment, and confiscation of all property.

McDowell's troops, mostly volunteers who had made only a threemonth's commitment, now greatly reduced in number, retreated to Rutherford and Burke Counties in North Carolina. Ferguson's army swelled to four thousand men at its peak, divided into seven battalions. He moved boldly into Tryon County and western North Carolina. McDowell retreated farther toward the Watauga in what is now East Tennessee. From his post in Gilbert Town, Ferguson sent a message to the mountain men. threatening to "march his army over the mountains, hang their leaders, and lay waste to their country with fire and sword." The message was conveyed by Samuel Philips, a captive of Ferguson, who was paroled for the express purpose of delivering the message to Philips' cousin, Isaac Shelby. It was then that Shelby and Sevier decided to appeal to Col. William Campbell of Abingdon, urging him to raise a volunteer army and to meet them on September 25th at Sycamore Flats (or Shoals) on the Watauga, a site forty miles from Abingdon. Their plan was to cross the mountains and to seek out and destroy Ferguson and his army, provided that they could amass a force of sufficient strength.

Cornwallis planned to lead his army from Charlotte to Salisbury, link up with Ferguson's corps, and eventually capture and destroy Chiswell's Lead Mines in Southwest Virginia near Abingdon. To assist in this plan, Tories and Cherokee Indians had already been incited by British Loyalists and were causing problems for Col. Campbell. Threatened on two fronts, Campbell decided to raise a force from the Virginia counties of Washington, Montgomery, and Botetourt sufficient to meet both challenges. He took four hundred men, half of his forces, to Watauga under his personal command. When the patriot forces gathered at Sycamore Shoals, the total number of troops came to fifteen hundred, nine hundred of whom were on horseback. This number was roughly equivalent to the strength of Ferguson's force, according to intelligence reports of the time. William Campbell, John Sevier, Isaac Shelby, and Joseph McDowell assembled as co-equal field-grade officers. All accounts agree that, either at Watauga or later at Gilbert Town, Campbell was elected commander of the entire force.

On September 15, 1780, the rebel troops set out for the east, crossing the mountains on September 16th. If they failed, their only line of

retreat would be to the Mississippi and south to Spanish sanctuary. Ferguson was in pursuit of Col. Elijah Clarke of Georgia, who had earlier scored a victory at Augusta and was retreating northward to join with other rebel forces. Two Whig deserters, Crawford and Chambers, brought news to Ferguson of the gathering of the over-mountain men, causing him to change his plans and attempt to rejoin Cornwallis' main force at Camden or return to his post at Ninety-Six. Ferguson dispatched two messengers to Cornwallis asking for reinforcements, but, fatefully, they were delayed in their mission. Ferguson had hoped for assistance from Major Banastre Tarleton, but Tarleton was ill with yellow fever. Ferguson also sent a request to Major Cruger for reinforcements from Ninety-Six, but a previous policy of extensive leaves for his Tory recruits had depleted the reserves there. As his options dwindled, Ferguson decided to make a stand at Kings Mountain where he confidently organized a defense so strong that "the Almighty could not drive him from it."

In the meantime, the rebel numbers had been strengthened when they were joined by South Carolina men under Brigadier General James Williams and additional North Carolina forces under Col. Cleveland and Col. Winston. The fifteen-hundred-man army of patriots traveled all during the night of October 6th. Under cover of rainy weather on the morning of October 7th, the troops were able to surround Kings Mountain and advance to within a quarter-mile of the enemy before they were discovered. At 4:00 p.m. the firing commenced. Ferguson tried to break out of his encirclement with three bayonet charges but was unsuccessful. The battle was over in one hour. The unerring aim of the mountain men with their long rifles, enhanced by their uphill firing trajectory from behind rocks and trees, as opposed to the more difficult down-hill trajectory faced by the Loyalist forces trapped on the mountain, had carried the day. Ferguson himself was killed, riddled with bullets as he made a desperate, lone effort to escape. His next in command, DePeyster, immediately called for quarters, but the surrender was marred by confusion. The first soldier raising the white flag was met with a hail of bullets. Fighting resumed until Col. Campbell called again for a cease fire on both sides. Then a group of Tories, returning from a foraging expedition and unaware of the surrender, fired upon and killed Gen. James Williams of South Carolina. Infuriated, Campbell ordered the firing on the hapless, encircled Tories to resume. His men were more than willing to comply. Their battle cry from the beginning had been "Remember Buford's

Quarter!" — a reference to the battle of Waxhaws the year before when the victorious British Major Banastre Tarleton had ordered all prisoners slaughtered. When the smoke had cleared, more than two hundred Loyalists lay dead. Fewer than thirty Patriots were killed.

The Loyalist prisoners received harsh treatment. Upon arriving at Gilbert Town three days after the battle, Campbell was pressured by a signed petition from his officers into trying certain of the Tory prisoners who were recognized as having committed atrocities against civilians. Nine were tried and hanged.

The effect of the victory of these militiamen at Kings Mountain was far-reaching. Instead of an unopposed sweep of his forces to Virginia and ultimate victory, Cornwallis was delayed for several months before he could resume his offensive. This delay gave precious time to Nathaniel Greene, Gates's replacement, and the Marquis de Lafayette, who organized the resistance under Continental leadership that eventually led to Cornwallis' final defeat and surrender at Yorktown.

The harsh treatment of the Tory prisoners led to a curbing of hanging and maltreatment on both sides. During the time leading up to the surrender at Yorktown, Col. Campbell's career continued to flourish. He served under Greene at Guilford Court House, commanding militia forces there, and eventually was given a commission as Brigadier General with the Continental Army serving under the Marquis de Lafavette. On his way home from the final victory at Yorktown, he suffered severe chest pains and in three days was dead at the age of forty-five. His sudden and untimely death enhanced his fame as the "Hero of Kings Mountain." The Commonwealth of Virginia voted him a sword, saddle, and horse in recognition of his services. Eulogies were officially published in the Virginia Gazette and similar periodicals in nearby states, and both Washington and Lafayette issued their own proclamations of praise. Though fame is ephemeral, nothing seemed so secure as the place of Gen. William Campbell in history. But such was not the case, as the Campbell/Shelby controversy proved.11

## The Importance of John Broady

Although my research into the Campbell/Shelby controversy unearthed further secondary sources that explored Shelby's political motivations at length, one can argue that too little attention has been paid to the role of William Campbell's manservant, John Broady, who was by all accounts a remarkable Campbell "look-alike." Campbell himself was said to have had blue eyes and red hair, a fact that seems to have led to the whole debate. I quote from Draper:

In the beginning of the action, Colonel Campbell's famous Bald Face, a black horse, proving skittish, he exchanged him, with his namesake, a Mr. Campbell, of his own corps, for a bay animal; and Bald Face was sent to the rear, and placed in charge of the Colonel's servant, John Broddy, who was a tall, well proportioned mulatto, and in the distance very much resembled his master. Broddy's curiosity prompted him to ride up within two hundred vards of the raging battle, saving "he had come to see what his master and the rest were doing." Broddy with his coat off, and sitting upon Bald Face, unwittingly deceived Colonels Shelby and Sevier, Captain Moses Shelby, and perhaps others, into the belief that it was Colonel Campbell himself. intently watching at a respectful distance, the progress of the engagement. But Campbell was all this time in the thickest of the fight, riding his bay horse till he became exhausted, when he abandoned him, and was the remainder of the battle at the head of his men, on foot, with his coat off and his shirt collar open.

It was during that critical period of the battle, when the final rally of the Virginians had been made, and after Colonel Campbell's horse had given out, that the intrepid chief ascended the mountain on foot, several paces in advance of his men; and, having reached the point of the ridge, he climbed over a steep rock, and took a view of the position of the enemy within a very short distance of their lines, and discovered that they were retreating from behind the rocky rampart they had hitherto occupied with so much security to themselves and injury to the mountaineers, when he rejoined his men unharmed.<sup>12</sup>

#### And this interesting footnote:

Colonel Cleveland [another of the Kings Mountain leaders] was something of a wag. While in camp en route for Kings Mountain, the obese and jolly Colonel walked up to Campbell's markee, and seeing him at the entrance and very much resembling his servant, pretended to mistake him for the latter, and accosted him with — "Halloo, Jack, did you take good care of my noble Roebuck when you fed your master's horse? — Ah! I ask your pardon, Colonel Campbell; you and your servant look

so much alike, led to the mistake." The joke was received, as it was given, in the best of good humor, and was much enjoyed among the officers.<sup>13</sup>

Partial siblings of mixed ethnic origin were not uncommon among slave-owning plantation families, a fact usually well known among the neighbors but seldom admitted among the families themselves. Thus, it is easy to speculate that the Campbell family knew exactly why Broady and Col. William Campbell were such look-alikes.

Other footnotes quote a number of sources bearing on whether or not Campbell was riding the bay or Bald Face, along with the following footnote:

No doubt others of the sons of Africa, beside Broddy, aided in menial occupations on the campaign. It is worthy of record, that "there is a tradition in the Kings Mountain region," says Colonel J. R. Logan, "that something more than a dozen Negroes were under arms in the battle, in behalf of liberty, and demeaned themselves bravely." <sup>14</sup>

Draper quotes a certain Captain Joel Lewis of Albemarle County, Virginia, as saying: "A colored freeman, named Bowman, of his company, claimed to have killed Ferguson." <sup>15</sup>

We have no evidence that Broady discharged his duties in any other capacity than as manservant to Campbell. Yet, the fact that other blacks were reported to have fought in the ranks of the over-mountain men<sup>16</sup> suggests that Broady's role may deserve more scrutiny.

In *The Paths of Glory*,<sup>17</sup> a fictionalized accounting of her family's history, Nelly Cummings Preston, a descendant of General Campbell's wife, addresses the controversy in considerable detail. Although the conversations that follow obviously cannot be accepted as historical fact, they are included here only to provide insight into the Preston family interpretation of the controversy. Nelly Cummings Preston describes the important role John Broady played in the family of General William Campbell and later in that of his son-in-law Francis Preston, whose wife, Sarah Buchanan Campbell Preston, inherited ownership of Broady on her father's death. Broady was clearly in charge of plantation production as a sort of foreman, but at the same time he was also responsible for the work of the domestic servants. He was described as looking different from the other Negroes because he had straight hair. His first-born child was described as an albino. He was emancipated by Francis Preston in

1793 (Preston had married Sarah Buchanan Campbell six months earlier), and was granted for his lifetime a thousand acres of "good bottom land" (Broady's Bottom near Saltville, Virginia) as a "fair compensation...for fifteen years of bondage which his Master never intended him to serve."<sup>18</sup>

Nelly Preston records an imagined conversation between Elizabeth Henry Campbell and her daughter:

One night as John Broady was piling logs beside the fireplace, your father spoke his name. "John, listen I want the mistress to hear what I have to say to you. Betsy, for five years, I have been fighting for freedom — liberty for my country and myself. During those years I have held in the thralldom of slavery a man who is as capable of freedom as I am myself. I have not thought of John as servitor but as friend. He came with us to this wilderness, and helped us make a home. He has cared for my loved ones, when I needs must be away. He followed me into the hell of Kings Mountain unafraid. He even wears my old clothes — and near paid for that with his life. At Kings Mountain a Tory mistook him for me and shot at him as he held the horses behind the line of battle. For his Christmas present I shall give him his freedom. Understand that John."

[Broady replied:] "It has not seemed slavery, Master Will, I am well content, but I do long to lift the stigma from Vinie and my Boy and for others who may later come. I thank you more than I can say." 19

The reference to Campbell's old clothes bears on the "look-alike" question, and Nelly Preston continues, in the voice of Elizabeth Henry Campbell, to recount to her daughter "the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth" regarding the Kings Mountain campaign, citing her husband's diary, letters he wrote to her while there, his official reports and less formal notes, interviews with Willie Russell (Campbell's adjutant), Robert Campbell, Captain Dysart, Andy McKinnon the black-smith, William Moore, and "even John Broady." She found "no discrepancy in what they have to say." She describes how Campbell's horse, "Black Albion," went lame and was left in the care of John Broady.

I want especially, my Daughter, that you remember this fact, because quite lately I have heard that old Col. Shelby is telling it around that he saw your father, during the heat of the battle, sitting on his well-known bald faced black horse down the

mountain side behind the fighting lines. The one he saw, of course, was John Broady, dressed in one of your father's well worn coats, holding the horse your father did not ride that day. It is also true that early in the fray, a Tory who knew Black Albion well, thought the figure was Col. Campbell and tried to kill him. When I asked John Broady about this tale and of his whereabouts, he answered me promptly. "Yes, Madam, I never got down off that Albion horse, till the fighting was plumb all over, but I did ride up the mountain fudder than Marster Will left me, 'cause I wanted to keep my eye [on] him just as you told me to do. I was right behind where the shooting was, and the Colonel was way up front." 20

Farther on in Preston's novel, we are informed that the British officers seeking the Patriot commander to offer their swords in surrender hesitated before the wild, red-headed giant, coatless and hatless, with his collar loose about his neck, a thoroughly unmilitary figure. But they obeyed when he ordered the officers to rank by themselves and the privates to stack arms and sit down uncovered.

I hear that Col. Shelby now intimates that your Father could not be found at the time of the surrender, but he does not go on to tell that when your Father came from the northern end of the clearing, he came laden with the swords of the surrendered officers. Let me hasten to remind you that these swords were turned over to the proper persons; not one came home with him as a trophy of war.<sup>21</sup>

The Paths of Glory also tells of Shelby's misconstruing the "apology" Campbell made to him after the battle. According to author Nelly Preston, Campbell was blaming himself for not controlling his men after the surrender; Shelby thought he was apologizing for not having taken part in the fighting.

In her book, Nelly Preston provides us with an exchange between Elizabeth Henry Campbell and John Broady which might explain Broady's provenance as follows:

What can you remember of your mother, John? From what country did they bring you here?

That I do not know, Madam. I only know there were mountains touching the sky and deep dark valleys full of trees like none that grow here. In the tops of the trees there was fruit, and nuts and on some of them balls big as my head, with milk

inside and good white meat. I cannot remember cold like this, and there were animals in the trees like little men. Folks don't believe the tales I tell, Madam, and I don't talk about it any more. I do remember going in a great procession down the mountains to worship our gods at a beautiful shrine. We rode on animals twice as big as Albion [Black Albion or Bald Face — Col. Campbell's horse], slow and lumbering and I think their tails hung down in front. Now that's foolish, isn't it, Mistis?

No, John, you mean an elephant, I know....

Well. Mam, we made a procession around a lake where the temple was, hundreds of men, hundreds. In that crowd must have been bad men who hated my father. They stole me and carried me down to the sea and sold me to a ship with other slaves aboard. They called me John, for a name to answer to, and they added the other because I said it often in my prayers. and I called his name aloud to rescue me, "Baroda, Baroda" so they called me John Broady, a good enough name since I have forgotten the one my father gave me. It was a Tea Ship, Ma'am, not a slaver and they did not chain me down in the hold, as I have heard many a black man tell. They paid little enough, I reckon, so what they sold me for was just velvet lining for their pockets. Colonel, Master Will's father, bought me when the ship came in to Annapolis. That's all there is to it, except that since they have taught me of The One True God I have never ceased to thank Him that it was unto these good hands I fell. Master Will and me, we've been friends more than master and slave, and I'll serve him, and you, Madam, as long as I draw the breath of life.22

Another version of John Broady's provenance by Gordon Aronhime appears in an interesting article among the issues of the Washington County (Virginia) Historical Society Bulletin:

The first emancipation recorded in our area is one of the most interesting. The emancipated was John Broady, as descendants now spell it though he wrote his signature as Broddy. This man, who figures in Draper's celebrated *Kings Mountain and Its Heroes*, was our only free black who made his mark on history. The date of emancipation is surprisingly early — September 30, 1793.<sup>23</sup>

Aronhime goes on to say that Broady was freed by General Francis Preston, whose wife Sally had inherited the slave from her father, General William Campbell, whose body servant Broady had been. Mrs. Preston's mother, Patrick Henry's sister Elizabeth, married General William Russell after Campbell's death. After being widowed for the second time, she freed six of her slaves in one emancipatory writ on July 21, 1795. Also, before 1800, two other members of the Broady family were freed.

John Broady was born in Virginia in 1755. He became a Campbell slave as a boy and early became body servant of the only son of that branch of the family, William Campbell, later the General. Broady lived until 1859. His wife, Milly, also a former Campbell slave, was born in Maryland in 1770 and did not die until 1885. The emancipation writ for John Broady states that this act was done "because of his service to his late master, General William Campbell, especially in the late war," meaning the American Revolution. John Broady wrote quite well, and his intelligence, good sense, and excellent memory are all clearly shown in his remarkable account of the hanging of the Tory Hopkins by General Campbell.

What are John Broady's origins exactly? Why did he look different from the other slaves? Baroda is a port city on the west coast of India in the State of Gujurat. East Indians as well as other nationalities were known to have been caught up in the slave trade. If the Nelly Preston legend is correct, John Broady could have come to America from India rather than Africa. This would have provided a respectable family explanation for his different appearance. On the other hand, it does not account for the "look-alike" status so clearly described in Draper's book, which would have been the case if his origins were in Virginia as Aronhime stated, with the added inference that he was a half-brother of Col. William Campbell.

In conclusion, Draper's 1881 book does not make clear when and by whom the Broady "look-alike" matter was invoked to explain the origins of the Campbell/Shelby controversy. Draper first learned of it in 1843, but apparently Col. Shelby was never aware of this aspect of the case and died without knowing about it. Much has been written about John Broady's true role in history, especially with regard to the Battle of Kings Mountain, beginning with his place of birth and his paternity and also examining aspects of how he dressed, which horse he was on, why he was shot at, and why he moved up closer to the battle. All of this speculation would seem to indicate that he was an important figure in

the Campbell/Shelby controversy regarding the real identity of "The Hero of the Battle of Kings Mountain." Perhaps John Broady is the key to answering the questions and assertions raised by Col. Isaac Shelby that shroud General William Campbell's fame and his place in history.

#### **Endnotes**

- \* Research for this article was done by Mason G. Robertson, who graduated from Washington & Lee University in 1950 with a B.A. in Biology and from medical school in 1954. After internship, residency, and a fellowship in Internal Medicine at Emory & Grady in Atlanta, he returned to Savannah where he practiced medicine. Lisa Hammett, David Bruce Wallace, and Mary Holliman contributed to earlier versions of this manuscript.
- 1. This letter, dated about a week after the McDowell letter, was written by a daughter of General John Preston, eldest son of Colonel William Preston and inheritor of Greenfield. It was addressed to her father at Greenfield and reported what James McDowell had written to his wife at Col Alto regarding the contents of a letter he had sent from Danville, Kentucky, to Francis Preston in Abingdon, Virginia, dated October 16, 1822.
- 2. Mason G. Robertson's mother, Susan Radford Preston, was born and raised at Greenfield in Fincastle, Botetourt County, Virginia. Robert Bowyer Preston, who had his own small farm in Botetourt County, was the last survivor of his generation of the Preston family to be born and raised at Greenfield, which burned to the ground in 1959. The attic at Greenfield had served as the repository for most of the historical papers of the Preston family for many years prior to the fire.
- 3. According to *The Prestons of Smithfield and Greenfield in Virginia* by John Frederick Dorman, William and Susanna Preston's oldest child was born in Augusta County, Virginia, and the next six children were born at Greenfield near Fincastle, Virginia. The final five children were born at Smithfield, built in 1773-1774, now in Blacksburg, Virginia.
- 4. Today Col Alto forms part of a hotel run by the Hampton Inn chain. The author of the letter was the father of Governor James McDowell.
- 5. Gen. Isaac Shelby was one son of Evan Shelby. When Shelby speaks of the man he loved "above all else," he must be referring to Col. William Preston. Evan Shelby was present at the militia muster in 1783 when Col. Preston collapsed and subsequently died at the home of Michael Price near Smithfield Plantation (Blacksburg, Virginia).
- 6. William (Willm/Wm) is William Campbell Preston (1794–1860), son of Francis Preston and Sarah Buchanan Campbell Preston, who later became President of the University of South Carolina and a U. S. Senator from that state. William, the grandson of both Gen. William Campbell and Col. William Preston, was active in the Campbell/Shelby controversy.
- 7. The Sevier referred to was probably Colonel John Sevier, one of the over-mountain men who took part in the battle of Kings Mountain.

- 8. Mr. Hart was probably Nathaniel Hart (1770–1844), husband of Susanna Preston, the fourth daughter of Col. William Preston, born at Greenfield. Their daughter, Virginia, married Alfred Shelby, son of Governor Isaac and Susannah (Hart) Shelby.
- 9. The first pamphlet appeared in the Filson Club History Quarterly, Vol. 66, No. 2, April 1992, and was entitled "The Shelby-Campbell Kings Mountain Controversy and the Gubernatorial Campaign of 1812." The other was published by the Historical Society of Washington County, Virginia, Series II, No. 22, May 1985 and was entitled "Brigadier General William Campbell 1745–1781."
- 10. These articles are referenced in the Appendix of Lyman Copeland Draper, Kings Mountain and Its Heroes (Cincinnati: 1881); reprinted by Genealogical Publishing Company (Baltimore: 1967).
- 11. See Draper. In his book, the entire Kings Mountain story was told. Draper gave his readers a detailed and meticulous picture of the battle based on numerous interviews and extensive correspondence with a great number of survivors of the battle. (The last survivor died in 1860 at age 100.) To this were added the recollections of the children and grandchildren of these Revolutionary War heroes. No aspect be it the weather, date, time of day, number of footmen, horses, bayonets, typography, distance marched, diet of the soldiers, amount of sleep escaped Draper's attention. Where facts differed markedly, a 110-page Appendix containing complete transcripts of diaries and pamphlets allowed the reader to make a choice. It was there, in this Appendix, that the Campbell/Shelby controversy was explained.

Editor's Note: In the article "Lyman Draper and the South," *Journal of Southern History*, Vol. 19, 1 (Feb. 1953), 20-31, William B. Hesseltine provides an analysis of Draper's interesting professional career. He writes "...throughout his life, he (Draper) was always on the southern side," and that, "It was Lyman Draper, heroworshiper and patriot, who, in his own favorite expression, 'rescued from oblivion' the 'hardy adventures' of countless heroes of the southwest and sang the praises of the pioneers.... He was, in truth, a maker of heroes...."

- 12. See Draper, p. 267.
- 13. See Draper, pp. 267-268. This anecdote was related to Draper in 1843 by Benjamin Starritt of Fayette County, Tennessee, who was one of Lee's Legion in the Revolution, and Lee's and Campbell's corps fought together at Guilford; Starritt personally knew Cleveland and had two brothers-in-law under Sevier at Kings Mountain.
- 14. See Draper, p. 268.
- 15. See Draper, p. 457.
- 16. John Hope Franklin, From Slavery to Freedom, 3rd ed. (New York: Vintage/RandomHouse, 1969, Section X, "That All Men Might Be Free", pp. 124-144). Franklin traces the evolution of ideas on the rights of the colonists and their paradoxical role as slave owners leading up to the Revolution. As increased awareness of their own oppression grew, so, too, did awareness of their role as oppressors. Therefore, it was no coincidence that the leader of the "motley rabble of saucey boys, Negroes and mulattos, Irish Teagues, and outlandish Jacktars," in the words of John Adams, was a runaway slave, Crispus Attucks, who at the age of 47 died leading a protest march against British soldiers at the famous "Boston Massacre" some twenty years after he had fled his Framingham, Massachusetts, master.

The American patriots resolved their ideological dilemma by increasingly linking slavery with British colonial policy. Not until the British were defeated did the colonists truly face their own responsibility for the "peculiar institution." Thus, the apparent paradox in the rhetoric of the Continental Congress and the Declaration of Independence when compared with that of the Constitutional Convention more than a decade later. On November 7, 1775, Lord Dunmore, British Colonial Governor of Virginia, issued a proclamation which offered freedom to any slave who enlisted in the British Army. The success and audacity of this move prompted General George Washington and the Continental Congress to reverse a previous policy of no Negroes, slave or free, in the New Army and to actively recruit Negroes to participate in the War for Independence in all states but Georgia and South Carolina. Franklin states: "Not only were they in regiments of the New England and Atlantic states, but they were found to be fighting by the side of their white fellows in Southern states. Hardly a military action between 1775 and 1781 was without some Negro participants." One version of the Battle of Bunker Hill credited the Negro and free man, Peter Salem, with the shooting of the British Major Pitcairn. By the end of the war there were an estimated 5,000 Negro soldiers, mostly from the North, serving with the 300,000 man American armed forces in the Revolution. Franklin points out that though "dimmed and muffled by the grim and practical realities of the war," some of the ideals which launched the Revolution survived the war and spawned an upsurge of antislavery feeling for a time. In 1783, an act was passed in Virginia freeing all Negro slaves "who served in the late war."

Editor's Note: For further reading about the recruitment of blacks to the Revolutionary cause, see: "A Slave for Every Soldier. The Strange History of Virginia's Forgotten Recruitment Acts of 1 January 1781," L. Scott Philyaw, Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. 109, 4 (2002).

- 17. Nelly Cummings Preston, *The Paths of Glory* (Richmond, Virginia: Whittet & Shepperson, 1961). In this historical novel, it must be emphasized that the author may have invoked certain degrees of poetic license in her rendering of the facts, especially of those colored by hearsay and family retellings. The result is a fictionalized story of the family's history.
- 18. Here transcribed is the Emancipation Certificate of John Broady found among the Preston Family Papers on deposit with the Earl Gregg Swem Library, College of William and Mary, Williamsburg, Virginia (Folder 2, Page 2):

To all whom it may concern:

Whereas my Negro man John (alias) John Broady claims a promise of Freedom from his former master General William Campbell for the faithful attendance on him at all times and more particularly while he was in the army in the last war and I who claim the said Negro in right of my wife, daughter of the [said] General Campbell feeling a desire to emancipate the said Negro man John as well as for the fulfillment of the above mentioned promise as the gratification of being instrumental of promoting a participation of LIBERTY to a fellow creature who by nature is entitled thereto DO by these presents for myself my heirs executors and administrators, fully emancipate and make free to all intents & purposes the said Negro man John (alias) John Broady

from me and my heirs forever. As witness my hand & seal this 20th day of September one thousand seven hundred and ninety three.

Francis Preston (Es.) Virginia

At a court continued and held for Washington County September 20th, 1793.

This instrument of writing emancipating John (Alias) John Broady was acknowledged in Court by Francis Preston Esq and Ordered [recorded]. In testimony whereof I have hereunto subscribed my name and affixed the Seal of this County this first day of October one thousand seven hundred and ninety three.

John Campbell CHC

I, Arthur Campbell presiding magistrate of the County of Washington do certify that the written attestation of John Campbell Clerk of the said County Court is in due form. Given under my hand this third day of October 1793.

Arthur Campbell

- 19. See Preston, p. 216.
- 20. See Preston, p. 205.
- 21. See Preston, p. 208.
- 22. See Preston, p. 155.
- Gordon Aronhime, Slavery on the Upper Holston (Washington County Historical Society Bulletin, Publication Series II, No. 18, May 1981).

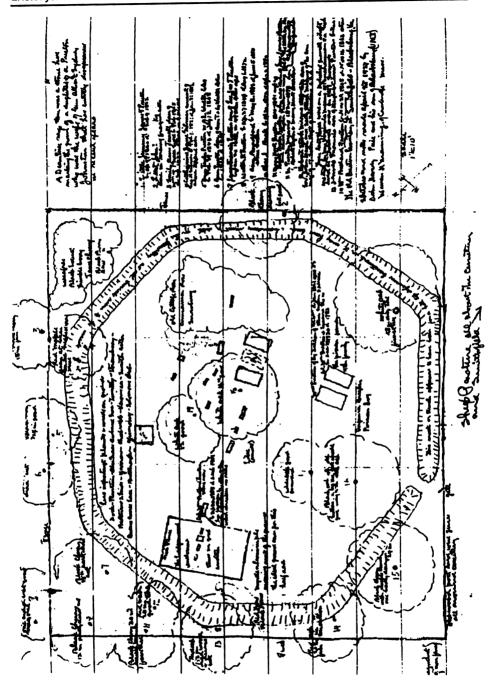


Figure 1. 1927 Price/Manning map of Preston Cemetery. Smithfield Files, Montgomery Branch APVA.

# The Preston Cemetery of Historic Smithfield Plantation

#### Laura Jones Wedin

From the porch, one sees to the left, gleaming white among the trees, the monuments and tablets that mark the last resting-place of a vanished people — for here, where the Preston name once lived and flourished, it has passed away...

— Cary Baldwin Preston, 1903 Bugle Yearbook Virginia Polytechnic Institute<sup>1,2</sup>

The Preston family cemetery in Blacksburg, Virginia, on the campus of Virginia Tech, is located to the southeast of the Historic Smithfield manor house, built circa 1774.3 It has served as a burying ground for six generations of Prestons including Colonel William Preston, a Revolutionary War leader and patriot. Located on a high knoll near the Southgate Drive entrance to the Virginia Tech campus, the cemetery's approximately one-third acre is enclosed by a brick masonry and black metal fence. Large oak and hickory trees shade the fenced area. Land to the west and south sides of the cemetery is cropland farmed by Virginia Tech. The north side is wooded. To the east are the Virginia-Maryland College of Veterinary Medicine and a storm drainage pond that was built in 1998. The oldest assumed burial in the cemetery dates to February. 1782.5 The first documented and marked burial is that of Colonel William Preston, who died in June 1783. The most recent is Edwin Page Preston (1921-2001), great-great-great-grandson of Colonel William Preston, in 2001.

# The Scots-Irish, Presbyterian Burials and the Preston Family

The Preston cemetery reflects the typical burial traditions of the Scots-Irish frontier immigrants in Virginia. Inhabitants of towns and cities were typically buried at the churchyard cemetery but, as the pioneer

migration pushed further west, the use of small family burying grounds placed within sight of the family house on a knoll or high ground, "closer to heaven" and shaded by oak trees, became common. In an agrarian landscape, these private gravevards included the planter family and its labor force of indentured servants, slaves, and freedman.<sup>6</sup> Scots-Irish cemeteries typically have entrance gates of slender iron bars with tips made by blacksmiths and are loosely organized by family unit, with graves arranged in rows, rather than clusters.7 In New England tradition, the graves are aligned to a west-east, head-to-foot celestial alignment. According to Protestant beliefs, this orientation would allow the dead to rise on Judgment Day to face God in the eastern sky.8 For burials prior to 1800, the body may have been dressed in a hastily sewn shroud of white linen or cotton or more simply wrapped in a winding sheet, fastened with brass pins and placed in a wooden coffin, almost always of the characteristic hexagonal shape, and usually made of pine. In the nineteenth century, the dead were typically clothed in their "Sunday best" and, while pine coffins were still typically used, other woods along with metal hardware became more common. The large flat ledger marker with beveled edges was a style typical among the upper-class Scots-Irish plantation burials from 1765 to 1835, and these types of markers are found in the Preston cemetery in various forms, as box-tomb and table tomb markers. 10

A few markers from the mid- to late-nineteenth century utilize engraved symbols and emblems; the remainder are text inscription only. Two inscriptions on the markers can be attributed to a Scottish poet and a Scottish minister; most other quotes are biblical in origin. The markers at Smithfield are simple and austere compared to area cemeteries such as the Westview Cemetery of Blacksburg.

In the cemetery are 28 marked graves (eleven are shared), three out-of-place markers, and two memorial markers; there are approximately 64 documented and/or assumed burials, and it is likely that there are more. From burial order and location of family members, it appears that sometime in the lifetime of James Patton Preston, son of William Preston, the cemetery space was divided up into quadrants to provide each of his sons, William Ballard, James Francis, and Robert Taylor Preston, and his daughter, Catherine Jane, an area for their family burials.

## **History of Previous Documentation**

Interest in the Preston cemetery, along with several documentation efforts, has occurred sporadically throughout the twentieth century. The first detailed map and recording of the cemetery appeared in 1927 with a map based on the notes of Harvey Lee Price<sup>11</sup> and correspondence of the Warren Manning Offices, a landscaping design and residential planning firm that had proposed a scenic drive through the Virginia Tech campus to include the cemetery on its route.<sup>12</sup> The 1927 Price/Manning map was drawn by hand, using a background grid as a guide (fig. 1). The map details the octagonal-shaped "moat" or ditch that surrounds the cemetery, 18 markers and much detail of the plant life around the cemetery, including identification and diameter measurements of trees. In c1930, Rudolph D. Michael, who at the time served as agricultural editor (1928–1965) at the Agricultural Experiment Station of Virginia Polytechnic Institute, drew by hand a map of the cemetery<sup>13</sup> (fig. 2). The hastily drawn map, while not to scale, had accompanying notes with corresponding

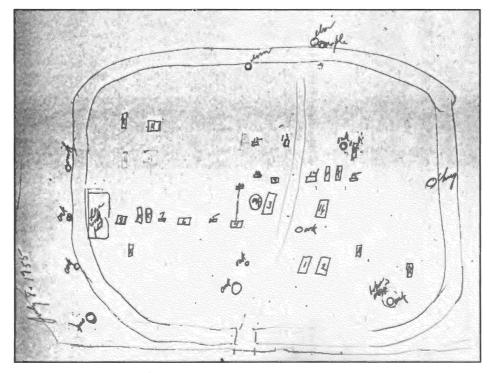


Figure 2. Circa 1930 Rudolph D. Michael drawing of the Preston Cemetery. Special Collections, Virginia Tech Library.

numbers and inscriptions of the existing markers. Michael also indicates rectangular boxes with X's — perhaps graves that no longer had markers or graves marked with wood or fieldstone.

The next known mapping was done in 1961 by Hartwell H. Gary, Sr., husband of Cary Baldwin Preston (1883-1960). Gary<sup>14</sup>, a 1904 alumnus of Virginia Polytechnic Institute and a civil engineer by profession, produced a drafted map in a 1"=10' scale.<sup>15</sup> This map shows measurements and specific graves indicated with their celestial alignment and provides a generation numeral and identifying number for each Preston grave (fig. 3). An accompanying legend, using the identification number of each grave, marked and unmarked, gives the name, birth and death

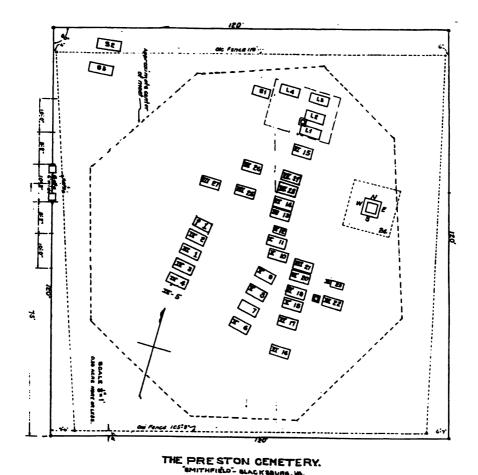


Figure 3. 1961 Hartwell Gary map of the Preston Cemetery. Smithfield Files, Montgomery Branch APVA.

dates, and sometimes additional information about the individual. This map was later amended and revised with additional graves and information in 1981 by retired Virginia Tech faculty member and Smithfield volunteer, C. H. "Hank" Powers.

In 1980, Smithfield's first resident curator, Anna Whitehead Kenney, documented the cemetery markers in a small booklet, "The Preston Cemetery at Smithfield Plantation 1782–1980", which is still sold in the museum shop of Historic Smithfield. In it, she documents each of the existing markers with their inscriptions and often includes additional information about the individual. She also has a page of "Graves no longer marked in the Smithfield Cemetery", which includes the grave of Governor James Patton Preston and his wife, Ann (Nancy or Nannie) Taylor Preston. The booklet was revised in 1984, adding new information, burials, and an index. The booklet has minor errors and inaccuracies in inscription transcription, but has served as a valuable resource for tracing and re-documenting those buried in the cemetery.

Several photographs of the cemetery have been located in Special Collections of the Virginia Tech library as well as the files of Smithfield, Montgomery Branch APVA. Despite the absence of documented dating on these photographs, approximate dating has been determined through the presence and changes of features such as fencing, trees, and the known dates of particular benchmark grave markers.

## Who is Buried in the Preston Cemetery

#### **Colonel William Preston**

Identity of the deceased was temporarily maintained in family memory or recorded in a family Bible. The earliest markers at the Preston cemetery were of wood, fieldstone, or simply a planting of periwinkle or boxwood over the grave. There was not an established stonecutter in the southwest area of Virginia until the second quarter of the nineteenth century<sup>16</sup>, although it seems clear that the Prestons did not access the talents of local German stonecutters, such as B. F. Spyker, who operated regionally beginning in the 1820s.<sup>17</sup> Professionally-cut and engraved marble markers had to be ordered from the northern commercial markets. The practice of "backdating" or marking a grave many years after the burial was prevalent in rural western Virginia in the nineteenth century.<sup>18</sup> The oldest inscribed marker of the Preston cemetery covers the grave of William and Susanna Preston (fig. 4). From a letter dated Janu-



Figure 4. View looking west toward gate and chain link fence. From left, the markers of Colonel William Preston and his son, William Preston of Kentucky. Photo c. 1965. Smithfield Files, Montgomery Branch APVA.

ary 1832 from Colonel Preston's son James Patton Preston to James' brother, Francis Preston, it is known that Francis purchased a marble slab while he was in Philadelphia and had it shipped to a Mr. Meem<sup>19</sup> in Lynchburg. James Patton Preston then had it hauled to Smithfield by John Fraction<sup>20</sup>, one of the Smithfield slaves.<sup>21</sup> The large flat ledger marker with a refined molded border bears the maker mark of Elias Brown of Philadelphia in the lower right hand corner. This grave was formally marked nine years after Susanna's death and almost 50 years after the death of Colonel Preston. In 1973, the Alleghany and William Preston Chapters of the NSDAR placed a bronze commemorative marker at the foot of Colonel Preston's grave.<sup>22</sup>

#### William Preston of Kentucky

Next to Colonel William Preston's grave, a flat marble ledger marker also marks the grave of his son William Preston of Kentucky (b. 1770 at

Greenfield). After a two-and-a-half month period of illness that included a stroke, influenza, jaundice, and finally dropsy<sup>23</sup> he died at the home of his sister, Letitia Preston, and her husband, Dr. John Floyd at Thorn Spring, Montgomery County [west of Dublin, Pulaski County], Virginia. on January 24, 1821. Letitia writes to William's wife, Caroline Hancock Preston, "His beloved remains are still in our house. Tomorrow they will be taken to Smithfield accompanied by many friends and on Sunday be committed to their parent earth." He was "interred by the side of our Father at his special request."24 This marker has lengthy and descriptive inscription. The inscription content, 25, 26 style and straight edges of this ledger marker suggest that his grave was not formally marked until the early 1850s. A photograph, c1891 (fig. 5), shows that the ledger marker for William Preston of Kentucky originally had a box base with square fluted columns at each corner and framing slabs of marble on the sides and ends.<sup>27</sup> This base may have fallen apart, as it was later replaced with one of rough-hewn limestone.<sup>28</sup> One section of the marble siding is now on the ground between the two markers, and the four square, fluted columns now mark the four corners of the Ledgerwood plot.<sup>29</sup> A commemorative bronze marker bearing the marker's inscription<sup>30</sup> was placed at the foot of his grave by descendants Caroline Joyes Cory and S. Gordan Dabney of Louisville, Kentucky, in 2001.

Early historic photographs show Colonel Preston's ledger top lying on the ground and then later supported by rough-hewn blocks of sandstone that are now found piled at the base of the nearby white oak tree (fig. 5, fig. 6). Rudolph Michael notes in 1929 that the ledger markers of both William and William of Kentucky were "weather-beaten slabs raised from the ground about two feet by supporting squares of stone." It is unlikely that the sandstone blocks were original to the marble ledger top but possibly were parts of another broken marker. Colonel William Preston's marker, along with two other flat ledger markers, appears to have had its base replaced with a brick masonry box, sometime in the mid-twentieth century, to possibly coincide with the installation of the masonry fence pillars that support the entrance gate.

#### Marked and Unmarked Graves

Several graves from the period prior to 1852 remain unmarked. Susanna Smith Floyd, the first child of Letitia Preston (daughter of Colonel William Preston) and Dr. John Floyd, died in 1806 at Smithfield and



Figure 5. Preston Cemetery, looking east, showing post and rail fence. Photograph c. 1891, attributed to the Rev. Ellison A. Smyth, Sr. Special Collections, Virginia Tech Library.

is probably buried in the Preston Cemetery.<sup>31</sup> In particular, the graves of children from this period were not marked, including four children of James Patton and Ann Taylor Preston.<sup>32</sup> In 1835, their daughter Susan died in Lexington, where she attended school. James Preston writes to his nephew James McDowell that her remains were returned to Smithfield in "a mournful procession" and that a "deeply afflicted circle of friends gave our dear Susan to the consecrated spot which she while living asked her mother to select for her remains."<sup>33</sup> The grave of Keziah (b. 1854–d. c1861), the daughter of William Ballard and Lucy Redd Preston, is marked with a small fieldstone, next to her parents' grave.<sup>34</sup>

Owing to improved transportation and the establishment of commercial stonecutters, most graves after 1852 were marked. Three markers are attributed to the work of John B. Gaddess, a stonecutter who had established himself in Lynchburg in April of 1852.<sup>35</sup> The first is a ledger marker for Catherine Jane Preston Gilmer, who died in January 1852.<sup>36,37</sup> Two vertical marble headstones by Gaddess are for Ann Taylor Preston Coles (1843–1868)<sup>38</sup> and daughter Ann Preston Coles (1868–1869).<sup>39</sup>



Figure 6. Looking northeast, from left, the markers of William Preston of Kentucky and Colonel William and Susanna Preston. Note post and wire fencing, Preston/Means obelisk in upper left corner. Photo c. 1935 to mid-20th c., Smithfield files, Montgomery Branch APVA.

The first two years of the Civil War saw fourteen burials in the Preston Cemetery. In 1861, Ann Barraud Taylor Preston (1778–1861), William Ballard's young daughter Keziah, and Sallie and Mary Means, daughters of Virginia Preston Means<sup>40</sup> died, as did an unnamed slave of James Francis Preston. In 1862, 214 deaths were recorded at the Montgomery County Courthouse compared with 63 the year before.<sup>41</sup> That year, the brothers James Francis and William Ballard Preston died along with James "Little Jimmy" Francis I and James Francis II (infant sons of James Francis and Sarah Ann Preston)<sup>42</sup> and four slaves belonging to Robert Taylor Preston. Isabell Ledgerwood, buried in the Ledgerwood section, died of typhoid fever that year. Seven C.S.A. veterans of the Civil War are buried in the cemetery; James Francis Preston died of disease contracted in service.

On the 1927 Price/Manning map, the grave of Hugh Caperton Preston (1856–1905) is noted as a "wood marker no dates". Rudolph Michael notes "wood — Black painted letters Hugh Caperton Preston." When his wife Cary Baldwin Preston died in 1935 and was buried in the same grave, this wooden marker was replaced by one of marble with a quote from Scottish poet Thomas Campbell: "To live in the hearts of those we leave behind is not to die."

In the northeastern portion of the cemetery, a large and imposing 12-foot tall grey granite obelisk serves to memorialize ten unmarked graves, which include Robert Taylor Preston and his descendants, with burial dates ranging from 1851 to 1901 (fig. 6).

#### Where is Governor James Patton Preston?

Most of those buried in the cemetery are descended from James Patton Preston, the fourth son of William and Susanna Preston and the first of their children to be born at Smithfield in 1774. James Patton Preston was only nine when he inherited Smithfield after his father's death in 1783. His mother Susanna, as directed by Col. Preston's will, chose to live at Smithfield and remained there for forty more years, until her death in 1823. Susanna managed the plantation until James came of age. James served in the War of 1812, receiving a serious injury to his leg that crippled him for the remainder of his life. He later became governor of Virginia (1816–1819) and lived off and on in Richmond where he was postmaster from 1824–1837.<sup>44</sup>

Governor James Patton Preston died 4 May 1843 at the age of 69. His wife Ann (Nannie or Nancy) Barraud Taylor died in 1861. A description of her funeral is found in a letter written at White Thorn by M.E. Caperton, sister-in-law of James Francis Preston's wife Sarah Ann Caperton, dated June 10, 1861:

She was buried yesterday [Sunday, June 9th] and I never witnessed such an imposing funeral. It was estimated that between 3 & 400 persons assembled at Smithfield. Sr. Carson the Methodist minister preached a short but eloquent sermon in the parlor. Mr. Preston [William Ballard Preston] requested that we all follow the herse on foot to the grave. Gov. Preston's grave was opened and Mr. Preston went him-self the day before and had the evergreen [probably periwinkle] which covered his father's grave cut just the shape of the grave and foldered over on the ground by the side of the grave. After the

Episcopal burial service was read and the coffin lowered, the servants assembled around the grave and sang a beautiful hymn. And as they sang four of the oldest servants stepped forward and pulled this mantle of evergreen over the grave which had been previously filled. I thought it the most beautiful idea I have ever seen. Eighteen years ago [1843] the old lady had her husband buried so that her remains might be placed on top of his. The evergreen she planted herself and her son considered it so sacred that he attended to the cutting himself and had the same covering drawn over her body that had rested over his father's ashes for 18 years. Was it not a beautiful idea?<sup>45</sup>

There is little doubt that Governor Preston's remains reside in the cemetery but the actual location for his and his wife's shared grave has not been confirmed. Anna Kenney. Smithfield's first curator, notes that through a conversation in 1970 with an old black gentleman, John Valentine<sup>46</sup> of Riner, Virginia, who had worked for the Preston family for many years<sup>47</sup>, told her that "one time a long time ago a limb from a big tree fell across one of the 'chist like' tombs. One of them high flat stones and broke it so that you could see the coffin." He had been told to level it and fill it in. The pieces of the stone were too badly broken to be mended. He was almost sure it was the grave of "de one dev called de Governor."48 The 1927 Price/Manning map does not show or mention this grave. The material in the Warren Manning letter of 19 March 1927 does not include information about a James Patton Preston marker. Rudolph Michael does not include this grave in his notes; however, on his hand-drawn map c1930 are several graves marked with X's, presumably those with just worn wood or fieldstone markers or no markers. The note "broken stone?" is scrawled next to the circle indicating the large oak tree near the two Williams' graves. From the 1927 map and letter, it would appear that the tree event had occurred prior to 1927.

## Contemporary and Historical Accounts of Preston Funerals and Burials

Other accounts of Preston burials appear in the diaries of long-time Blacksburg resident Rosanna Croy Dawson (1822–1906), who detailed everyday life in the town. At the death of Charles Trigg Beale, son of William Radford and Lucy Preston Beale, Dawson's entry for April 24, 1890, reads, "Charley Beal died last night he was here in the College

School [V.P.I.] had the tyfoid [sic] fever"<sup>49</sup> A year later, Charles Beale's fellow cadets at V.P.I. gave him a military memorial service at the cemetery.<sup>50</sup> His grave is marked with a distinctive marble obelisk that has been valuable in dating old photographs of the cemetery (fig. 5).

Just three years after Charles Beale's death, his sister Anne died. Rosanna Dawson's entry for June 8, 1893 reads, "Anna Beal was Buired at the Preston Graveyard by her brother.<sup>51,52</sup>

The 1898 diary of Rosanna Croy Dawson in her "A Sheat for Deathes" reads:

may 30 Mrs. Virginia Means<sup>53</sup> the daughter of Cor [Colonel] Bob Preston died at her home in Birmingham Alabama, took newmonia May 28th they brought her two Prestons old home to bury her by her Husband [Robert Stark Means, d. 1874] She was taken two the Me[thodist] church they sang a few verses of the hymn howfirm a foundation, the last hymn a Sleep in Jesus, big crowd of old friends

June 2th She was buried at the Semetery Where all the Prestons are buried, the old Grandfather and Grandmother was layed years ago" <sup>54</sup>

Her regular diary entry for June 2 was "...at 3 oclock I went too the funeral...Mrs. Sarah Preston was at the funeral and lots of old friends"55.

On December 4, 1902, the remains of Colonel William Ballard Preston (1858–1901), a great-grandson of William and Susanna and son of James Francis Preston, were taken to the cemetery at Smithfield for final interment with full military honors by the V.P.I. Corps of Cadets, almost a year after his death in the Philippines while in military service. He had served as commandant of the Virginia Tech Corps of Cadets and as a faculty member. As a mark of respect, the Cadet Battalion paraded as the procession passed through the Institute grounds, accompanied the body to the cemetery, and performed graveside honors.<sup>56</sup>

#### Shared Graves — a Preston Tradition

Spouses sharing graves in the Preston cemetery became a Preston family tradition beginning with Susanna, who directed in her will "that my body shall be deposited in Grave with my deceased and ever dear husband."<sup>57</sup> This practice continued for at least ten other Preston burials including James Patton Preston and his wife Ann Preston; James Francis and wife, Sarah Ann Caperton Preston; William Ballard and wife Lucy

Redd Preston; Hugh Caperton and wife Cary Baldwin Preston; and Cary B. Preston Gary and her husband, Hartwell Gary. The unmarried sisters Caperton and Katherine Preston, who established and owned Camp Carysbrook, also share a grave. A family story relates that "Miss Kat" (Katherine), the younger sister, had requested that, if Caperton died first, her remains be reburied on top of Katherine's as Caperton was the stronger and most gracious of the two and ready to meet whatever came along.<sup>58</sup>

#### Other Burials — Not Prestons

Another white marble ledger marker, also made by Elias Brown and dating from the 1830s, belongs to Emily Ann Eyre Terrill (1805–1832). She was married to Dr. George Terrill of the U.S. Navy in 1830. Her connection to the Preston family is unknown, but the marble marker with lengthy and elaborate inscriptions and location within the cemetery indicates that her family was of considerable means or that she or her husband's family had a special relationship with the Preston family.

On Christmas Day 1859, a Miss Julia Binners was laid to rest in an unmarked grave at the Preston cemetery. From a register entry of the Bannister Parish, dated 12 January 1860 in Pittsylvania County, Virginia, we know that Julia Binners was born in the West Indies to a wealthy English planter family and was educated in Philadelphia. She enjoyed the refined society of the West Indies until the abolition of slavery ruined the family fortune. Her family relocated in New Haven, Connecticut. After the death of her parents, Miss Binners had to make a living as a teacher. She taught at a small school for girls in Chatham, Virginia, from 1845 until March 1859, when she began living at the home of William Ballard Preston.<sup>60</sup> By this time she was old and ill and perhaps William offered his home to her as a last refuge before her death on December 23, 1859. Her relationship to the family is unknown but there may be a connection through Judge George Gilmer of Pittsylvania County, who married Catherine Jane Ann Gilmer and had close ties to the Preston family. Her grave is unmarked and its exact location is unknown — but it is most likely in the area near the William Ballard Preston quadrant.

## Who May Not Be Buried at Smithfield

The Gary Map of 1961 indicates that the grave of James Patton Preston is beside the unmarked grave of John Preston (1764–1827), which is on the south side of Col. Preston's. In a letter from Janie Preston

Boulware Lamb to Mr. J. Adger Stewart, dated 23 April 1941, she claims that John was buried at Smithfield.<sup>61</sup> But the Dorman book indicates that John died at Greenfield and, according to Botetourt county history, John is buried at Greenfield.<sup>62</sup> Other Preston family members affiliated with Greenfield claim that John is buried at a cemetery at Greenfield. There is no marker for John at either the Preston cemetery or the Greenfield cemeteries.

The Price/Manning map and also the Gary map indicate that Henrietta Preston (1803–1835)<sup>63</sup>, who was married to Albert Sidney Johnson (later to become a well-known C.S.A. general), is buried at the Preston cemetery — this statement was based on legend, not on an existing grave marker. John Dorman's material says that Henrietta is buried at the Cave Hill Cemetery in Louisville, Kentucky.<sup>64</sup>

Anna Kenney's booklet mentions the markers of George H. Gilmer (1810–1874), who was married to Catherine Ann Preston, and his second wife, Elizabeth Carrington Gilmer (1828–1903). Of Gilmer's marker, Kenney notes: "There is an identical tombstone for him in the Gilmer Plot in the Chatham Cemetery except that that stone gives the Biblical reference for the quotation II Timothy 1–12." A note in the revised 1984 version of her booklet says: "In recent years the markers for George H. Gilmer and Elizabeth C. Gilmer have disappeared. They are not piled with other broken stones in the cemetery." The Gilmers are probably buried in the Chatham plot, but the family may have provided memorial markers in the Preston cemetery. The markers Kenney mentions are not indicated on the Price/Manning map nor in the Michael notes.

Family history and legend has it that James Patton, uncle of William Preston, was buried 'at Smithfield' after he was killed at the Drapers Meadow Massacre on July 30, 1755<sup>65</sup>— reasoning that William Preston would have remembered the burial location of his uncle, years later. Letters of Letitia Preston Floyd<sup>66</sup> and her daughter, Letitia Floyd Lewis<sup>67</sup> mention that Patton was buried near or at Smithfield. A story, attributed to Cary Baldwin Preston, in the 1900 Bugle Yearbook about the massacre says "he was interred near the scene of the massacre, probably in the grove of Smithfield." No evidence has been found to support these claims.

A persistent legend also has it that Governor John B. Floyd is buried in the Preston Cemetery. Floyd, the son of Letitia Preston and John Floyd, was born at Smithfield in 1806 but was buried at the Sinking

Spring Cemetery in Abingdon, Virginia.<sup>69</sup> A Virginia Tech trivia sheet used by student campus guides has John B. Floyd listed as one of the two governors buried in the cemetery, but this information is undocumented.

#### **Other Graves**

As in churchyard cemeteries, the first part of the Preston cemetery to be used was the southwest side. The north side of these cemeteries was considered less desirable and often the last part of the burying ground to be used. It was sometimes reserved for strangers, prisoners, slaves, servants, and indigents. To Graves in the northern section of the cemetery include the overseer's plot for the Ledgerwood family and the three documented servant/slave graves.

#### Overseers' Plot

The Ledgerwood family plot is shown on the 1927 Price/Manning map, the c. 1930 Michael drawing, and the 1961 Gary map, marked L1 through L4. Anderson Ledgerwood (1823–1892) was long-time overseer of White Thorn and later Smithfield. His wife Hester and son Allen are buried in the plot along with Isabell Ledgerwood, who might have been his mother or possibly an aunt. Anderson Ledgerwood's name is seen in the Montgomery County death records as the informant for several slave deaths and the death of Isabell. Three of the markers with death dates ranging from 1862–1880 in the Ledgerwood plot are of grey slate<sup>71</sup> and more New England in style. They were possibly the work of an area German stonecarver. Anderson Ledgerwood's marker is of marble. A four-sided marble obelisk memorial marker with the names of the four burials was perhaps placed around the time that Anderson Ledgerwood's grave was marked in the early 1890s.

## Graves of Slaves and Former Slaves — "Aunt Ginny"

The enslaved population of Smithfield was probably buried nearby, possibly on the north side of the cemetery, on the down slope. In 1774, at Smithfield, William Preston wrote of the death of the slave Peter and later the almost imminent death of Sam.<sup>72</sup> There are other suspected slave burial sites, marked with periwinkle growth, just north of the current northern fence line. The "S" graves, those of slaves or servants, are indicated only on the 1961 Gary map. S1 is indicated as the unmarked

grave of Virginia "Aunt Ginny" Capers, a former slave and "colored mammy for the older children of Hugh and Cary Preston"<sup>73</sup>, and is located to the west, just outside the Ledgerwood plot. At the time, in post-Civil War Virginia, her burial within the Preston Cemetery was a strong statement of family sentiment of her value and inclusion in the family sphere. The Graves S2 and S3, noted as "from markers and location in grave-yard, these were probably colored servants", are located outside the moat area and the old fence line in the northwest corner.

## Markers No Longer in situ

Three markers at the cemetery are no longer in their original locations, nor are those identified on the markers known to be Prestons. One "G.S. Died Aug. 21, 1841 Aged 6-Y" is beautifully engraved on a small sandstone marker that leans against the marker of Isabell Ledgerwood. The other, the "Benjamin" marker, hewn from native limestone into a shield shape and inscribed by shallow scratching, lies on a pile of stones near the oldest oak tree. "BENJAMI[N] HE WAS BORN/ AND WAS TAKEIN1/7 OF JUNE/HE LIEVE IN SEP[TEM]/BER THE 8 AN H[E]/ DIED 1840". Two crudely etched crosses are at the top. It could be the marker of a child, but does not match the other Benjamin (d. 1851) of the Preston family. Both markers are likely to be the markers of servants or slaves or even an overseer's child. They are significant, being two of the earliest engraved markers, reflecting the local vernacular of the area. Another undated marble marker is for Lavinia Hart Berkeley (b. c1830 – d. before June 1880). This marker was noted in Rudolph Michael's notes of 1929 as well as in Anna Kenney's booklet.<sup>77</sup> The head and footstone, now in four pieces, rest or lean on the Preston/Means monument. She was the wife of Colonel Norborne Berkeley, C.S.A., who became the college farm manager (of V.P.I.) in 1876.<sup>78</sup> There is a possible connection to the Hart family who married into several lines of Prestons, or through Col. Berkeley's service during the Civil War.

## **Layout of the Preston Cemetery**

#### The Entrance

The entrance to the cemetery is through a welded three-rail picket iron gate supported by two tall masonry brick pillars, features not noted in the 1927 Price/Manning map but that do appear on the 1961 Gary map (fig. 3, 4). Rudolph Michael mentions "the iron gate" in his notes

but does not specifically indicate it on his hand-drawn map of c. 1930. Mary Hart Means Lloyd (b. 1916), daughter of Virginia Preston Means, recalls the gate as a child.<sup>79</sup> Anna Kenney's revised 1984 booklet notes that the brother of Smithfield overseer Anderson Ledgerwood was an engineer with the Norfolk and Western Railroad, and had sent the money to Smithfield to have the "anchor fence and iron gate" placed at the cemetery.80 The iron gate and attached name plaque were noted by the James Madison University historic resource survey crew in their 1978 recording81 although they refer to it as the "Patton" cemetery. Archaeologist Tom Klatka of the Virginia Department of Historic Resources. in his August 2002 visit to the cemetery, noted that the gate appears altered — that the finial points were perhaps original but that the gate had been adjusted or remade. 82 An early fencing, which appears in an old photograph, was post and rail (fig. 5). Later photographs show a post and wire fence (fig. 6), which is also noted on the 1927 Price/Manning map. The post and wire fence, remains of which are in the wooded area north of the cemetery, was encircled with a metal chain-link fence at an unknown date. The 1961 Gary map indicates both the new chain-link fence line as well as the old fence line.83 The chain link fence also appears in a photograph c1965 (fig. 4). This fencing remained until the newer black aluminum metal fencing with additional masonry supports was installed in 1999 by Virginia Tech.

#### The Moat — a Possible "ha ha"

The moat or ditching that surrounds the graves in the cemetery is a most interesting and historic feature of the cemetery. In an approximate octagonal shape, it was suggested on the 1927 Price/Manning map that the "moat or trench appears to have been for a hill top defensive breastworks" but also notes "or it may have been a boundary moat or ditch for the cemetery as all the burials seem to be inside of it." Rudolph Michael writes in a draft article c1929: "Completely around the cemetery, except for a small section at the iron gate, runs a trench about three feet deep and four to six feet wide. Since the cemetery is on high ground, it does not seem reasonable that the trench was made for drainage purposes." Michael is also thinking of the moat in terms of a defensive earthworks when he notes "the position of the hill along the road made it an admirable place to establish an outpost and first defense..." On the 1961 Gary map, a dashed line locates the approximate center of the moat.86

Archaeologist Tom Klatka suggests that the moat could be a "ha ha" or an underground fence that was sometimes used by elite families in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries to restrict the movement of large animals and livestock, although he says that he had never heard of one being west of the Piedmont. The moat at the Preston cemetery is shallow and has sloped sides, different from a typical "ha ha", which was usually three feet deep with straight sides, but Mr. Klatka pointed out that weathering, erosion, and perhaps added fill in later years could have altered a "ha ha". A future archeological investigation can help ascertain the original form and construction of this moat.

#### Flora of the Preston Cemetery

Periwinkle (Vinca minor, also called myrtle), an evergreen perennial, was commonly used as a ground cover for cemeteries in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. It provided a quick-growing ground cover that prevented erosion, hid the grave subsidence, and provided flowers around the time of Easter. Periwinkle is found throughout the Preston cemetery, primarily on grave sites. Several graves to the northeast of the cemetery are only marked with periwinkle — these graves belong to those listed on the large Preston/Means obelisk monument. Many oak trees, of black and white variety, provide much shade. Grass is thin and sparse. Shade trees, particularly oaks, had symbolic meaning going back to Roman times. The large "first tree," a large white oak in the southwest corner near Colonel Preston's grave, was possibly shading the first graves. It may be the tree whose branch was responsible for crushing the marker of James Patton Preston. Ghost ground impressions remain from two large oak trees that were noted in the 1927 Price/Manning map and the 1930 Michael drawing. The Michael drawing indicates one maple, two elms, ten oaks, and one cherry tree. The Price map, done just a few years before Michael's jottings, identifies the elms as black cherries. Other trees, mostly hickories, have been established since these maps were done.

A large American boxwood (Buxus sempervirens)<sup>87</sup> more than eight feet tall, which flourishes in the east central end of the cemetery, now obscures the footstone of Hugh Caperton and Cary Baldwin Preston's grave. This boxwood appears in a photograph c. mid-twentieth century at a height of approximately three feet. Boxwoods were a common planting to mark either a row of graves or an individual grave. Other scrubby

boxwoods, stunted and low to the ground from repeated mowings, appear in other areas of the oldest section.

Today, running cedar, as well as poison ivy, is found in a shady area just west of Colonel Preston's grave. Poison ivy was noted in this location on the 1927 Price/Manning map along with Virginia creeper. The Price/Manning map also mentioned the presence of old cottage rose, cinnamon rose, and snowberry along with many other kinds of wildflowers and plants.

## Survey and Documentation in the Computer Age

The most recent documentation was done in the summer and fall of 2002. All previous documentation of the cemetery available, along with genealogical records and family papers, has been closely examined to provide correct historical perspective. This information will be transferred to electronic media along with digital photographs of each marker. Inscriptions have been re-recorded and previous transcription errors have been noted. The cemetery is scheduled to be re-surveyed in order to get a revised recording and global positioning system (GPS) of its location. A new map will be made using this revised information. To facilitate any future interments, an attempt to locate undocumented, unmarked graves will be made. An archeological investigation of the moat or "ha ha" is being coordinated under the guidance of Tom Klatka of the Virginia Department of Historic Resources. A field survey and location of unmarked grave shafts is being considered by area archaeologist Dr. Clifford Boyd of Radford University. Plans to list the cemetery on the National Register of Historic Places are underway. A revised map, new booklet, and possibly an internet/CD format will be created to serve as a resource guide to the cemetery and to be sold in the museum shop of Smithfield.

## Ownership, Care, and Future of the Preston Cemetery

The cemetery became part of Virginia Tech property when the land on which it exists [Plat I] was sold by the Preston family to Tech in 1967 with an agreement that family ingress/egress and burial rights, along with perpetual care, would be observed. The grounds are maintained by Virginia Tech. After the chain link fence had broken, Tech replaced it with aluminum fencing and additional masonry supports. The area just north of the cemetery, probably a slave burying ground, has been allowed to

"naturalize." Some recent tree pruning has been done. The Montgomery Branch APVA is now working in close partnership with the Virginia Tech Grounds Department to ensure that the existing markers are not damaged any further by nylon filament cutters, etc. Children and parents associated with the SmithfieldKids program at Historic Smithfield assisted with cleaning of the markers. Repairs and stabilization are needed for several markers, but this will be an area that will require further study and private funding. A newly formed committee of Montgomery Branch APVA will oversee future affairs of the Preston Cemetery. A tour of the cemetery is in development; the first groups visited in September 2002 during Smithfield's Heritage Days.

The author welcomes contacts and any rediscovered information and resources regarding the Preston cemetery or those buried there.

## **Buried in the Preston Cemetery\*\***

\* denotes a shared grave [] unmarked graves

## III-1 William Preston (1730–1783) m. Susanna Smith Preston (1739–1823)\*\*89

- [IV] Ann Nancy Preston (1769–1782) no marker, actual location of grave unknown
- IV-2 William Preston of Kentucky (1768–1821)
- [IV] James Patton Preston (1774–1843) m. Ann Barraud Taylor (1778–1861)\* no marker, actual location unknown
  - [V]Sarah Barraud Preston d. 1804 as infant, grave is not marked or located
  - [V-8]Susanna Edmonia Preston (1818–1823) died young, no marker
  - [V-10] Virginia Ann Preston (1816–1833) died young, no marker
  - [V]Susan Preston (c1825–1835) died young, grave is not marked or located

## V-18 William Ballard Preston (1805–1862) m. Lucy Redd (1819–1891)\*

- VI-20 1. Ann Taylor Preston (1843–1868) m. (Walter Coles 1839–1892), died from childbirth
  - VII 21 Ann Preston Coles (1868–1869) as infant
- VI-17 2. James Patton Preston (1846–1920), pointed native stone marker
- VI-16 3. Waller Redd Preston (1847–1872) m. Harriet Means (1846–1869)\*

<sup>\*\*</sup>Roman numerals stand for generations beginning with Archibald Preston; numbering corresponds to Hartwell Gary's 1961 map of the cemetery.



The present-day Preston Cemetery, looking east. Photo, July 2002, L. Wedin.

VI-19 4. Keziah Preston (1854–c1861), native stone marker near her parents

VII-23 Ann Radford Beale (1868–1893), child of Lucy Redd Preston and William Beale

VII-22 Charles Trigg Beale (1872–1890), child of Lucy Redd Preston and William Beale

## [V]-24 Robert Taylor Preston (1809–1880) m. Mary Hart (1810–1881)\*?

[VI] 1. Virginia Ann Emily (1834–1898) m. Robert Stark Means (1833–1874)\*?

[VII]- i. Sallie Stark Means (1860–1861) as infant

[VII]- ii. Mary Hart Means(1861–1861) as infant

[VII]- iii. Ballard Preston Means (1867–1867)as infant

[VII]- iv. Courtney Hanson Means (1868–1877)as young child

[VI] 2. Benjamin Hart Preston (1836–1851) as young child

[VI] 3. James Patton Preston (1838–1901)

## V-11 James Francis Preston (1813–1862) m. Sarah Ann Caperton (1826–1908)\*

VI-14 1. Hugh Caperton Preston (1856–1905) m. Cary Baldwin (1858-1935)\*

VII-13 i. James Francis Preston (1878-1879) as infant

VII-25 ii. Robert Baldwin Preston Sr. (1881–1944)

m. Merle Page (1892-1973)\*

VIII-30 Robert Baldwin Preston Jr. (1916–1982)

m. Elnora Coffman (1920-2001)\*

VIII-31 Edwin Page Preston (1921–2001)

VII-27 iii. Cary Baldwin Preston (1883-1960)

m. Hartwell Gary (1881-1966)\*

VII-28 iv. Sarah Caperton Preston (1885–1965) unmarried\*

VII-28 vii. Katherine Stuart Preston (1894–1967) unmarried\*

VII-26 v. William Ballard Preston (1888–1959) m. Lelia Dew (1893–1984)\*?

VII-29 vi. Hugh Caperton Preston, Jr. (1893–1966)

VI-15 2. William Ballard Preston (1858–1901) m. Elizabeth Blackford Scott (1864–1920)\*

VI-12 3. James Francis Preston "Little Jimmy" (1860–1862) as infant

[VI-?] 4. James Francis Preston II (1861–1862) as infant, grave unmarked

V-9 Catherine Jane Preston (1821–1852) m. (Judge George H. Gilmer 1810–1874)\*?

[VI]- i. James Preston Gilmer d. 1852 as infant, probably buried with his mother, Catherine Jane Preston.

## Burials in cemetery not related to Preston Family

7 Emily Ann Eyre (1805–1832), family from Eyre Hall, Northampton, Virginia, m. (Dr. George Terrill)

[?] Miss Julia Binners of Pittsylvania Co., Virginia, d. Dec. 23, 1859, exact burial location unknown

### Ledgerwood Plot

(overseers of White Thorn and Smithfield in mid-to-late 1800s)

L1 Allen Ledgerwood (1857-1880)

L2 Anderson Ledgerwood (1823-1892) m.

L3 Hester Ledgerwood (1820-1870)

L4 Isabell Ledgerwood (1782-1862)

## Slave/Servant graves (as marked on 1961 Gary map)

[S1] "Aunt Ginny" (or "Jenny") Virginia Capers (also known as Caperton, Fraction). Virginia Capers was a former slave and African-American child minder for older children of Hugh Caperton and Cary Baldwin Preston (b. c1830–? d. after 1880).

[S2] Unknown and [S3] Unknown

## Markers out of situ — original location in cemetery unknown

"Benjamin" d. 1840 - probably an infant (marker near large oak tree)

"G.S." d. Aug. 21, 1841 aged 6 years (behind L4, near Ledgerwood plot)

Lavinia Hart Berkeley – no date (leaning on Preston/Means Monument) (b. c1830–d. before June 1880)

There are several unmarked graves scattered throughout the cemetery and the other side of the north fence.

## Acknowledgments

The author thanks the following individuals for their assistance: Sandy Wilson, Smithfield APVA volunteer; Terry Nicholson, Administrative Director of Smithfield; Christy Mackie, Smithfield Interpreter; Pam Linkous-Polan, Smithfield Kids coordinator; Tom Klatka, archaeologist, Virginia Department of Historic Resources; Dr. Clifford Boyd, Professor of Archaeology, Radford University; Joel Hardison and Mike Barber, archaeologists with the U.S. Forest Service; Donna Ludwig, Smithfield APVA volunteer; Dianna Pickering, Smithfield APVA garden coordinator; Robert Lamb, Jr., Preston descendant and family representative; Mason Robertson, M.D., Preston descendant; Mary Hart Means Lloyd, Preston descendant; Miss Jane Preston, Preston descendant; Virginia Tech Grounds Department; and David Wedin, who provided technical, editorial, and moral support.

#### About the Author

Laura Jones Wedin has her Master of Fine Arts from Virginia Tech and is employed by the Virginia Tech Alumni Association. An active volunteer with Historic Smithfield, she currently serves on the Montgomery Branch APVA Board, and is enrolled in the archaeological technician certification program of the Archeological Society of Virginia.

## **Endnotes**

- 1. C. B. Preston, "The Revolt of the Slaves," 1903 Bugle Yearbook (Virginia Polytechnic Institute), p. 100.
- 2. Cary Marx Baldwin Preston (1858–1935), who married Hugh Caperton Preston, son of James Francis Preston.
- 3. Historic Smithfield was acquired by the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities (APVA) in 1959. It was restored and opened to the public in 1965.

- 4. Joint Legislative Audit and Review Commission. Special Report: Preservation of Revolutionary War Veteran Gravesites in Virginia to the Governor and the General Assembly of Virginia (House Document No. 42, Commonwealth of Virginia, 2001), p. 49.
- Colonel Preston's daughter Ann Nancy died of smallpox at the age of 13. Letter from WP to Colonel Daniel Smith, March 7, 1782 (State Historical Society of Wisconsin, The Draper Manuscripts 4XX), p. 49.
- 6. Thomas S. Klatka, Cultural Expressions of Nature in Sacred Contexts: Documentation of Family & Community Cemeteries in Roanoke County, Virginia (Virginia Department of Historic Resources, 2000), p. 17.
- 7. Ruth M. Little, Sticks and Stones Three Centuries of North Carolina Gravemarkers (Chapel Hill and London: University of North Carolina Press, 1998), p. 78.
- 8. Klatka, p. 10.
- 9. Jack Larkin, The Reshaping of Everyday Life, 1790–1840 (New York: Harper & Row, 1989), p. 99.
- 10. Little, p. 14. If the ledger rests on a high, solid base of brick or stone, it is a box tomb. If it rests on stone corner posts, it is a table-tomb.
- 11. Price was Dean of Agriculture from 1908 to 1948 at Virginia Tech.
- 12. Virginia Tech Special Collection manuscript MS62-007, Manning Papers. Copy of map from Montgomery Branch APVA files appears to have been done by the Manning offices from notes provided by Dean Price, but provenance is uncertain. Its plat reference number 1442-56-4 appears to correspond to Manning's plat of the proposed scenic byway, labeled 1442-25.
- 13. Rudolph Dixon Michael Papers, 1921–1960, n.d. 0.2 cu. ft. Agricultural editor (1928–1965 at the Agricultural Experiment Station of Virginia Polytechnic Institute. Head of the Agricultural Information Department (1964–1965). Ms60-005. Virginia Tech Special Collections Library.
- 14. Hartwell Gary (1881–1966) was married to Cary Baldwin Preston, daughter of Hugh Caperton Preston.
- 15. Hartwell Gary Map of the Preston Cemetery, 1961. Smithfield files, Montgomery Branch APVA.
- 16. Klatka, pp. 194, 601; author's communication with Tom Klatka 12/02/2002. In Southwest Virginia, the earliest inscriptions on fieldstone markers date to the first decade of the nineteenth century. These early inscribed markers merely document a death date or the initials of the deceased. More complete biographical information does not become prevalent until the second decade of the nineteenth century.
- 17. Clara Cox, ed. A Special Place for 200 Years: A History of Blacksburg, Virginia (Town of Blacksburg, 1998), p. 67.
- 18. Little, p. 18.
- 19. Possibly a Mr. John Gaw Meem, b. c1795, married to Eliza Campbell Russell. He was reportedly a banker who also was the president of Lynchburg Manufacturing Company, c1846. <a href="http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/">http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/</a>

igm.cgi?op=GET&db=:2173577&id=I111857055>

<a href="http://theoldentimes.com/johngmeem46va.html">http://theoldentimes.com/johngmeem46va.html</a>

<a href="http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/">http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/</a>

igm.cgi?op=GET&db=n4554r&id=I68724>

- 20. John Fraction, b. c. 1800, is listed in Montgomery County Will Book 4, p. 339 with the 1826 estate appraisal of William Preston and in the 1843 slave inventory of James Patton Preston, Montgomery County Will Book 7, p. 130. He is found later in the Freedmen's Bureau List of 1867, age 67, with his former owner as Robert T. Preston, grandson of William Preston.
- 21. Anna W. Kenney, The Preston Cemetery of Smithfield Plantation 1782–1980. (Blacksburg: Montgomery Branch APVA, Rev. 1984), Notes p. 1 (p. ii).
- 22. Alleghany Chapter, National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution. Records, Ms95-019. Virginia Tech Special Collections Library.
- 23. *Dropsy* is an old term for edema or swelling. William's dropsy was probably indicative of congestive heart failure.
- 24. Preston Papers Joyes Collection, Folder 3399. Filson Club Historical Society, Mss\A\P937\Box6\fl.66.
- 25. Inscription on marker reads in part: "His widow Caroline Hancock Preston died in 1849 and is interred at Cave Hill Cemetery near Louisville".
- 26. John Frederick Dorman, The Prestons of Smithfield and Greenfield in Virginia: Descendants of John and Elizabeth (Patton) Preston through Five Generations (Louisville, Kentucky: Filson Club, 1982), p. 58, records that Caroline died 20 December 1847.
- 27. Anna Kenney attributes this columned ledger marker to that of James Patton Preston. Undated document, Kenney File, Smithfield, Montgomery Branch APVA.
- 28. The marble sections for this type of marker are held together with iron cleats which rust, similar to a collapsed box tomb marker c1850s in the McGavock cemetery near Wytheville. Photographs and notes provided by Smithfield volunteer Sandy Wilson.
- 29. Anderson Ledgerwood was overseer of Smithfield during the mid-to-late 1800s.
- 30. Rudolph Michael includes the line "and great strength and possessing a noble presence" in his record, which is missing from the Kenney record as well as from the commemorative marker, probably because of the enlargement of a crack that goes through this line.
- 31. Dorman, p. 70. Their son, the first George Rogers Clark Floyd (b. 20 Nov. 1807, Montgomery County; died 14 August 1808, Christiansburg) may also be buried at Smithfield.
- 32. Dorman, p. 65. Daughters are Sarah Barraud (1804), Susanna Edmonia Preston (1818–1823), Virginia Ann Preston (1816–1833) and Susan Preston (c1825–1835).
- 33. Smithfield-Preston Foundation Papers, Ms97-002, Flatbox, Folder 2, Special Collections, Virginia Tech library.
- 34. Kenney, p. 26.
- 35. J. Daniel Pezzoni, "Virginian to the Grave," Virginia Cavalcade, 51 (Spring 2002), pp. 66-67.
- 36. Daughter of James Patton Preston. She most likely died from complications of childbirth and was probably buried with her infant son James Preston Gilmer, b. 31 Dec. 1851 – d. 1 Jan. 1852. Dorman, pp. 268-9.
- 37. John Gilmer Speed, The Gilmers in America (New York, 1897), p. 153.
- 38. Daughter of William Ballard and Lucy Redd Preston. Married Dr. Walter Coles in 1864. She died four days after giving birth to Ann Taylor Preston Coles.

- 39. Born in 1868, died at 8 months in 1869. From William B. Coles, The Coles Family of Virginia (New York, 1931), p. 312.
- 40. She and her husband Robert Stark Means lived at Solitude with her parents Robert T. and Mary Hart Preston 1860 census of Montgomery County, Virginia.
- 41. Devota Parrish Pack and Emily Allen, Death Records in Court Records of Montgomery Co., Va. 1853–1871 (Colonel William Christian Chapter: DAR, 1977).
- 42. Were there two infant James? The Montgomery County Death Records only reports the death of James F. Preston on 8 November 1862 of scarlet fever at the age of 1 year and 10 months (b. October 29, 1861). The marker in the cemetery has "Little Jimmy": James F. Preston, b. 9 April 1860 and d. 9 February 1862, at the age of 1 year and 10 days. Was this the same child?
- 43. Michael papers, MS60-005, Virginia Tech Special Collections Library.
- 44. Dorman, p. 64.
- 45. Caperton Papers, MS91-034, Virginia Tech Special Collections Library. Original letters at Virginia State Library.
- 46. John Valentine of Riner, Virginia, 1901–1970, Social Security Death Index, at <a href="http://ssdi.genealogy.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/ssdi.cgi/">http://ssdi.genealogy.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/ssdi.cgi/</a>
- 47. He was caretaker of Camp Carysbrook in Riner, Virginia, for forty years for sisters Caperton and Katherine Preston, founders of the girl's camp. The sisters are buried in Preston cemetery.
- 48. Kenney, p. 20.
- 49. Devota Parrish Pack, compiler, 1890 Diary of Rosanna Croy Dawson (Blackburg, Virginia: Devota Parrish Pack, 1979), p. 8. Lucy Preston Beale was a daughter of William Ballard Preston (1805–1862).
- 50. Harry Downey Temple, *The Bugle's Echo*, vol. 1 (1872–1900), (Blacksburg, Virginia: Virginia Tech Corps of Cadets Alumni, Inc.), p. 267.
- 51. She was daughter of William Radford and Lucy Preston Beale, who are buried in Fincastle, Va. The brother was most likely Preston Beale.
- 52. D. P. Pack, compiler, The year of 1893 in the life of Rosanna Croy Dawson of Blacksburg, Virginia (Blacksburg, Virginia: D. P. Pack, 1980), p. 48.
- 53. Virginia Preston Means (1834–1898) was the daughter of Robert T. Preston.
- 54. D. Pack, compiler, Blacksburg in 1898 by Roseanna Croy Dawson (Blacksburg, Virginia: D. Pack, 1978), p. 99.
- 55. Pack, 1898 Diary, p. 34.
- 56. Temple, pp. 789-90, 863.
- 57. Will of Susanna S. Preston, Dec. 10, 1817, Preston Papers, folder 3437, Montgomery County Will book 4, p. 197.
- 58. From the author's conversation on 7/29/2002 with Kathy Baker who worked at Camp Carysbrook in the 1980s.
- 59. She was daughter of William B. Eyre and Grace Duncombe Taylor of Eyre Hall in Northampton, Virginia, and was orphaned at age 3. Her parents and other siblings are all buried at Eyre Hall.
- 60. Maud Carter Clement, An Abbreviated History of Pittsylvania County, Virginia "Chapter Eight: Education" (Virginia, c1952)
  - <a href="http://www.victorianvilla.com/sims-mitchell/local/clement/mc/abb/08.htm">http://www.victorianvilla.com/sims-mitchell/local/clement/mc/abb/08.htm</a>

- 61. Preston Papers, Joyes Collection, Mss.\A\P937; box 6\fl. 66, Filson Club Historical Society.
- 62. Helen C. Caldwell, chairman, Botetourt County history before 1900 through county cemetery records (Botetourt Country, Virginia: Bicentennial Publication Committee, 1978), p. 77.
- 63. She was a daughter of William Preston of Kentucky.
- 64. Dorman, p. 233.
- 65. Interestingly, Rudolph Michael has the date, July 8, 1755, written in the margin of his drawing of the cemetery (fig. 2). This is the earlier of two dates claimed for the Draper's Meadow Massacre. The date of 30 July 1755 is now the more accepted of the two as the true date, per Lee Pendleton, *Indian Massacres in Montgomery County*, 1755–1756; Drapers Meadow massacre retold (Christiansburg, Va., 1973), pp. 16-18.
- 66. Letter of Letitia Preston Floyd (1779–1852) to her son Benjamin Rush Floyd, dated 22 February 1843. She writes that William Preston "arrived at Smithfield (then called Draper's meadows) where they found Patton, Mrs. Draper, the mother of Mrs. Ingles, and the children buried." Southern Historical Collection, #1312-2-Letitia Preston Floyd Papers.
- 67. Letter of Letitia Floyd Lewis (1814–1887) to Mr. Robert W. Hughes, dated 13 June 1879. It says "in my childhood I knew the location of the grave." Filson Club Collection.
- 68. Attributed to C. B. Preston, "Draper's Meadow One Hundred and Forty-Five Years Ago. 1900 Bugle Yearbook (Virginia Polytechnic Institute), p. 79.
- 69. Dorman, p. 290.
- 70. Jessie Lie Farber, "Symbolism on Gravestones" Frequently Asked Questions (The Association for Gravestone Studies, 2001) < http://www.gravestonestudies.org>
- 71. Archaeologist Tom Klatka says that the slate markers could have been quarried from Arvonia, Buckingham County, Virginia.
- 72. Patricia Givens Johnson, William Preston and the Allegheny Patriots. (Pulaski, Va.: B. D. Smith and Bros., Printers, Inc., 1976), pp. 118, 130.
- 73. Noted on 1961 Gary map. Virginia Caperton, age 36, a widow and former black slave with four children, is found in the Freedmen's Bureau Montgomery County list of 1867, working for wages for S. A. Preston. Virginia Capers is found in the 1870 census, Montgomery County, age 40, listed as a cook with the same four children in a dwelling near the White Thorn home. It is believed that she may have been the daughter of slave John Fraction. There is a Virginia, age 14, listed in James Patton Preston's slave inventory of 1843, near John Fraction. In the 1880 census, listed with the household of Sarah Ann Caperton Preston, is a Virginia Fraction listed, age 51, widowed, a servant with seven children although the three youngest are more probably her grandchildren.
- 74. Cary Baldwin Preston Gary (1883–1960), daughter of Hugh Caperton Preston, refers to "Aunt' Jenny's (our old cook) house" on the White Thorn property in a letter dated June 24, 1947, Smithfield Collection, Montgomery Branch APVA.
- 75. Noted on 1961 Gary map. Fieldstone markers for the S2 and S3 graves are visible in a color photograph c1980. Anna Kenney Papers, Smithfield, Montgomery Branch APVA.

- 76. Anna Kenney mentions the "Benjamin" stone in her booklet, p. 26. Brackets indicate missing or reconstructed text on the broken right side of the stone.
- 77. Michael's notes have her name listed near the names of William Ballard Preston and Waller Preston. There is an "unknown grave" marked on his drawn map with a check mark that may correspond with a check mark next to her name on his notes.
- 78. Temple, p. 100.
- 79. From an October 2002 author's phone conversation with Mary Hart Means Lloyd.
- 80. Kenney cites her information as given to her in 1968 by the widow of H.E. Ledgerwood, [b. 1862–19—?] son of overseer Anderson Ledgerwood that Anderson's brother paid for the anchor fence and iron gate. "Anchor" is the trademarked brand name of the chain link fence.
- 81. Preston Cemetery is listed with Department of Historic Resources as site 44MY43.
- 82. The 1927 Price/Manning map notes a "fragment of iron fence" at the northwest corner of the fence line. There is a metal farm fence near the northwest corner 10/2002.
- 83. Virginia Tech farm manager Chuck Shorter recalls a second fence inside the chain link fencing. Old fence posts inside the chain-link fence line are visible in a c1980 color photograph. Anna Kenney Papers at Smithfield, Montgomery Branch APVA.
- 84. Carl R. Lounsbury, An Illustrated Glossary of Early Southern Architecture and Landscape (University Press of Virginia, 1994), p. 172. Lounsbury defines a ha-ha (ha ha or ha haw) as "a barrier between the pleasure grounds and the nearby pasture or wilderness to keep out large wildlife and livestock, and to extend the prospect [view] into the adjacent countryside, so that the plantation appeared to be an unbroken continuation of the pleasure grounds." He mentions three early variations: a wall and ditch; and a sunken fence (literally, a fence below ground with its top just below ground surface and out of view). He illustrates the restored/reconstructed "wall and ditch" ha-ha at Stratford Hall, Robert E. Lee's ancestral home in Westmoreland County, and quotes two late eighteenth century accounts that mention the use of a ha-ha. George Washington had one at Mount Vernon and Thomas Jefferson had a version (ditch crossed with horizontal fence rails) at Monticello.
- 85. Price/Manning map, 1927.
- 86. Gary map, 1961.
- 87. Identified by Dianna Pickering, Master Gardener and Smithfield volunteer.
- 88. Montgomery County Clerk Documents, Deed Book 274, pages 183 & 184, dated 1 February 1967. Map Plat Book 4, p. 45.
- 89. Dorman, p. 12-13. The Bible of their daughter Letitia Preston Floyd gives William's birth date of 25 December 1729. His gravestone has the date of 25 December 1730. Letitia's Bible lists Susanna's birth as 23 January 1740. The Bible of William Preston places Susanna's birth at 1 February 1739. Journal of son Francis Preston gives her birth as 4 February 1739. The gravestone gives the date January 1739.

## The Diaries of James Armistead Otey

James Otey Hoge, Jr.

What follows is the second volume of the diaries, that for 1909. The last issue of *The Smithfield Review* ran most of the first volume, which contains Otey's entries for 1889–1891. Taken together, these four years offer an accurate representation of the diaries as a whole. As with the first volume, I occasionally delete an entry or entries that I find particularly trivial or redundant, and insert a row of ellipsis points to mark the deletion. Identifications made in the notes to volume one are not repeated here. Like all the other volumes of the diaries, except the first, the second volume was given to me by my cousin Louisa Gillet Dekker. I am deeply grateful both to her and to Roy D. Montgomery, who assisted me with a number of difficult identifications.

# Errata for Part I of the Otey Diaries as Found in Volume 6 of *The Smithfield Review*

- Page 75, 2nd paragraph, 1st line. Replace "Carolee Pleasants Otey" with "Carolee Otey Pleasants".
- Page 76, 2nd paragraph, 9th line. Replace the word "stoats" with "shoats".
- Page 81, Footnote 18, 1st line. Replace the word "youngest" with the word "eldest" (Dr. Kent Black was the eldest child of Dr. Harvey Black).
- Page 84, Footnote 31, 1st line should read: "Alexander (Alex) Black (1857–1935) was the son of Dr. Harvey Black and ..." (He was not the eldest of the four children.).
- Page 84, Footnote 31, 3rd line: Death year of Elizabeth Kent Otey should be 1926 (not 1925).
- Page 88, Footnote 49, 4th line. Replace "(b. 1903)" with "(d. 1903)". (In other words, Kyle Robinson died in 1903).
- Page 89, Footnote 56, 1st line. Replace the date "1892" with "1898".

- (The Alexander Black house was built in 1898, not 1892. According to the Croy-Dawson diaries, the earlier house burned in 1897).
- Page 95, Footnote 3, 5th line. Replace comma with the word "and" (It should read: "to Rockwood in the late 1890s and lived there . . .").
- Page 95, Footnote 6, 1st line. Replace "(1854-1922)" with "(1854-1921)" (In other words, John L. Long died in 1921 not 1922).
- Page 97, Footnote 14. Delete the existing footnote and replace with: "John Alexander McDonald (b. 1816), the son of Jonas McDonald and Elizabeth Foster and the grandson of Joseph McDonald and Elizabeth Ogle. John McDonald married Harriet McDonald (b. 1827), the daughter of Joseph McDonald and Nancy Chapman of Tazewell County, Virginia. John and Harriet McDonald had no children; they lived in the house on present Glade Road later occupied by Charles Black McDonald and later still by Charles Gordon McDonald."
- Page 105, Footnote 43, 2nd line of the table. Replace the name "Shell" with "Shutt".
- Page 109, Footnote 62, 2nd line. Replace the date "(1820–1912)" with "(1820–1913)".
- Page 112, Footnote 71, 4th line. Space needed after first word.
- Page 118, Footnote 92, 4th line. Omit the word "New" just prior to the words "St. Peter's Lutheran Church".
- Page 119, July 27, August 4, and August 6 entries. Footnote reference numbers should be 97, 98, and 99 (not 95, 96, and 97, respectively).
- Page 122, September 7 entry. Footnote reference number should be 112 (not 110).
- Page 150, Index entry for William Ballard Preston: Replace existing entry with:

Preston

William	27, 3	0, 71-3
William Ballard		86

## 1909

There are no extant volumes of the diaries for the years between 1891 and 1909. I have no explanation for this long period of silence, though I think it likely Otey kept his diaries during much, if not all, of that time and that those volumes have simply been lost. In any case, those eighteen years saw drastic changes in his life, many of them fraught with loss. In 1891 Otey was a twenty-nine-year-old bachelor living with his mother and father in the family home. By 1909 he had been married twice, both times happily by all accounts, but he had lost his first wife, his mother and father, and seven infant children during that eighteen-year span.

In 1892 Otey's mother died at the age of sixty-five. In June 1893, he married Carolee Otey Pleasants, a distant cousin, the daughter of James J. Pleasants, Jr. and Laura Kathleen (Robinson) Pleasants, of Huntsville, Alabama, to whom he had been engaged since 1891. Carolee moved into Walnut Spring, of course, but she lived less than three years after her marriage, until February 1896, and during that time she and Otey lost two sets of twins. All four infants were born prematurely and were dead at birth or died soon thereafter. Then, as if to punctuate the sadness of the *fin de siècle* for Otey, Dr. Otey died in 1896, while visiting his daughter Mamie Patterson and her family in Philadelphia.

The new century brought new life to Otey and to Walnut Spring, in more ways than one, but it also brought additional sadness. In 1903 John Hampton Hoge's sudden death, at the age of forty-seven, made Otey's sister Louisa a thirty-one-year-old widow with six minor children. Soon after her husband's death, Louisa Hoge and her children moved in with Otey. The next year Otey was appointed legal guardian of his Hoge nieces and nephews, and, having no children of his own (either then or later), he became something of a father to Louise, Hampton, Liz Otey, Dan, Jim (his namesake), and Alice. Although they and their mother later moved to town, where they lived in the house Dr. Kent Black built on the corner of present Draper Road and Clay Street, the Hoge children were extremely close to their Uncle Jim, and, as often as not, they could be found at their second home Walnut Spring.

Also in 1903. Otev met Iulia Magruder Tyler, the half sister of James Hoge Tyler, who became a Virginia state senator in 1878, lieutenant governor in 1890, and Governor of Virginia in 1898. (Governor Tyler's mother Eliza Hoge [1815-1846] was the second wife of George Tyler [1817-1889], the son of Henry Tyler and Lucinda Coleman and for many years a member of the Virginia House of Delegates. Julia Virginia Magruder. Julia Magruder Tyler's mother, whom George Tyler married in 1862, was his fourth wife.) An experienced teacher of children with impaired hearing, Julia Tyler came to Blacksburg in the spring of 1903, expecting to stay only a few months while she worked with Otey's niece "Tick" Hoge. She never left, however, as she and Otev fell in love, became engaged that autumn, and married the following April. Unfortunately their happiness was not unalloyed for long. By the time the diaries that we have resume five years later. Iim and Julia Otev had lost three children, each of whom, like the four Otev lost with his first wife, was either born dead or died shortly after birth. The sorrow of the loss of all those children is palpable in the poignant prayer Iulia Otev set down the day before the birth of the second of her three, and in her terse comment on the following day:

Lord, grant to my surgeon courage and skill, to me patience and endurance, and above all grant life & strength of body to our child about to be born. I ask in the name of Jesus Christ, our Advocate and Savior — Amen —

Jan. 9, 1906 Our child was born dead. Jan. 10, 1906 Julia Tyler Otey

Friday, January 1 (1) What you can't keep in your head get with your heels.

- (2) A patch by a patch is neighborly. A patch on a patch is beggarly. **Saturday, January 2** (3) A third campaign for the same office is like champagne with the sparkles out.
  - (4) The people's love is a ruler's lifeguard.
- (5) Janus looks back on the old year, forward to the new Hence his double face.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1.</sup> I am unable to say why Otey opens his 1909 diary with these five aphorisms or why he sprinkles others through his entries for the next few days. (Actually for five days in early January, the aphorisms *are* his entries.)

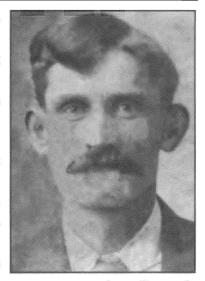
Sunday, January 3 Sam Wray the Irishman came back. But I did not keep him. He is a good workman, but drinks. You'll get a letter if a spark comes towards you.

Monday, January 4 John Harkness (the grist mill boy) is doing well with cows. Mrs. John Price & John<sup>2</sup> do the milking. Harve and Hub Snider<sup>3</sup> working on the farm. Cows running in graveyard field.<sup>4</sup>

Tuesday, January 5 If a dog lay on his back, he is measuring a grave. Drop a dish rag, company is coming hungry.

Wednesday, January 6 If a cock crows in bed he will rise with a wet head. Stars in a muddle (many) the earth will be a puddle.

Thursday, January 7 Put your secrets in the back of your head where there is no mouth.



Harvey Jackson "Harve" Snider. (Photograph courtesy of Mr. and Mrs. Roy D. Montgomery).

[No entries for January 8 – January 25]

Tuesday, January 26 Hitched Buster Brown — did well. Mr. Jim Surface<sup>5</sup> broke him.

- 2. John Preston "Turkey John" Price, the son of Michael Miller Price and Catherine "Casy" Keister, and his wife Eliza Ellen Cook, the daughter of David Cook. The John Prices' children included Mary Pearl Price, who married Zachariah "Zach" Sheppard; Myrtle B. Price, who married George Ben Vyule, from Athens, Greece; Lillie Catherine Price, who married James Preston Kanode and later James Arthur Pascoe; and George M. Price, who married Margie Ann Long, "Jim Tucker" Long's daughter.
- 3. Harvey Jackson "Harve" Snider (1873–1930) and Ira Hubbard "Hub" Snider (1879–1956) were the sons of Louise Talitha Scott (b. 1841) and Samuel Enos Snider (b. 1841). Harve Snider married Ressie Elizabeth Price (1893–1967), the daughter of John Wesley Price (1847–1920) and Mary Josephine Rock (1859–1943); Hub Snider never married.
- 4. The graveyard field abuts part of the farm's southwestern boundary and, at its northern edge, includes the old McDonald burying ground, dating from the eighteenth century, when the McDonalds owned that part of what later became Walnut Spring.
- 5. James Otey Surface (1856–1925), the son of Andrew J. "Andy" Surface and Sarah Margaret Snider. He married Victoria Jane Price (1855–1940), the daughter of Enos Elias Price and Sarah Elizabeth Cromer. Jim and Victoria Surface's home was located on Brush Mountain adjacent to Walnut Spring.

Wednesday, January 27 Cut willows in upper meadow. Hauled straw and old hay out of front field with Buster Brown and Belle. Weather is beautiful for time of year. First lamb yesterday.

Thursday, January 28 Harve and Hub Snider are working for me.

[No entry for January 29]

Saturday, January 30 Have 4 lambs. Temperature 2 degrees above zero at 8 AM — south porch. Did not send milk as it was so cold. Had all stock except Sheep in barn tonight.

Sunday, January 31 Still cold, no snow, no lambs. Mrs. John Price & John Harkness milked. 12 cows giving milk now. One lamb dead.

Monday, February 1 Getting first ice. One new lamb. Sent off milk. Buster Brown is hauling up ice like an old horse. Jim Surface driving the colt.

Tuesday, February 2 Fine day. Finished filling ice house. Went to Mr. Walter Linkous' burial. Flora had fine heifer calf "Blanche." Laura Price in trap<sup>6</sup> with us to burial. Hattie Wall came back with us.

Wednesday, February 3 Too frozen to plow. Sent load of corn to mill to be crushed for cows. The 6th lamb today. Jim B. Price & I altered colts and pigs. He took dinner with us. Corn is 75c a bushel. Cows doing well and we got 290 lbs. of milk.

Thursday, February 4 Salted & counted up stock. Had fodder & hay put in for cows. Sold Cow (Katie) to McKonkley @ 3 ct.8 Lambs (6).

Friday, February 5 I fed sheep & cows. Drove up horses and Julia & I drove up to Blacksburg. Found old Mr. Robert Patterson<sup>9</sup> ill. Lulu Hoge was not well. We brought Jim & Alice Hoge<sup>10</sup> home with us. Roads good & we enjoyed the drive.

A trap is a light, two-wheeled carriage with springs.

<sup>6.</sup> The daughter of Hughey Price and Mary Henrietta Stanger, Laura Price (1878–1962) married Charles Bernard "Bernie" Kanode.

<sup>7.</sup> James Brown "Jim" or "Jim Saddler" Price (1874–1943) was the son of Zachariah "Zach" and Arminta (Price) Price. He married Sarah Elizabeth Snider (1870–1953), the daughter of William Patterson "Pat" Snider and Zipporah Harless. Price and Otey castrated the colts and pigs.

<sup>8.</sup> Three cents a pound.

<sup>9.</sup> Robert Masquel Patterson's father.

<sup>10.</sup> James Otey "Jim" Hoge and Alice Dunbar Hoge (1901–1930) were the two youngest children of John Hampton Hoge and Louisa Virginia Otey. Alice Hoge married Norman Drysdale Gillet (1896 –1986), in 1924, and had one child, Louisa Kent Otey (Gillet) Dekker (b. 1925), who currently lives in Blacksburg with her hus-

**Saturday, February 6** Too frozen to plow. Hauled Manure.<sup>11</sup> Jim Hoge rode Gyp (pony) to Charlie McDonald's.<sup>12</sup> Alice rode for mail & lost a letter. We found it. Work is going on nicely although I have not a hand in the Farm house.

Sunday, February 7 Up early and looked after stock and Julia, Alice, Jim, and I started to church in Blacksburg. When we got on hill, we found three young lambs, and the Snow was falling so fast we turned back and got up the sheep. Lambs (11).

Monday, February 8 Fine day, snow going fast. Eggs 15c.<sup>13</sup> Three new lambs. Julia planted 80 strawberry plants & renewed the asparagus bed. Jim and Alice here. Lulu sick, scarlet fever. Classes, etc. at school to close for a week.

Tuesday, February 9 Six lambs today. Cold, snowy rain, but it stopped by night. Eggs 15c. Picked out 11 bushels of Irish potatoes. Sold 6 bushels before at 75c. Lambs (20).

Wednesday, February 10 Windy and cool. Julia did not go to town to church supper as it was so rough. Men only fed & looked after stock. Jim & Alice played indoors most of the day. I bought 3 willow Baskets from a Negro man. Lambs (22).

Thursday, February 11 Heard the Cowans have refused \$200 an acre for farm. Sheep ate sliced Irish potatoes. Cows gave 12 gallons milk at night — 15 cows, 4 are [ ]. Two cows feed 3 heifer calves.

*Friday, February* 12 I took milk to town. Jim Hoge went and came back. I remained in town with Butterfly for Dr. Spencer<sup>14</sup> to see. Old Mr. Patterson is no better. I paid for wagon. Got home about 6 PM. Lambs (24).

band Henry J. Dekker (b. 1920), a former rector of the Virginia Tech board of visitors and recipient of the William H. Ruffner Award, the university's highest honor. James O. Hoge married Marian Amelia Barrett (1904 –1984), in 1926, and had one child, the editor of this article. Otey left his home and the land surrounding it to James O. Hoge and the rest of his farm, in five equal shares, to his other four surviving Hoge nieces and nephews and his great-niece Louisa Gillet. Jim Hoge bought those five shares in 1944, two years after Otey's death.

- 11. Manure is routinely hauled away from both cattle barns and horse stables, where it accumulates, gets in the way, and attracts flies. Usually the manure is then spread over hay fields, grain fields, or pasture land, where it acts as a fertilizer.
- 12. Charles Black McDonald (1860 –1934) was the son of Floyd Fechtig McDonald and Jane Black. He married Katherine Lelia "Kate" McDonald (b. 1869).
- 13. Otey means eggs were selling for 15 cents a dozen.
- 14. Dr. John Spencer, originally of Ontario, Canada, an assistant professor of veterinary medicine and state veterinarian at V.P.I. since 1900.

Saturday, February 13 Butterfly's medicine that Dr. Spencer gave her seems to do her good. We finished hauling all lumber from the saw mill place in woods. Has been a beautiful warm day. All got Valentines in mail. Lambs (26).

Sunday, February 14 Rainy. Did not go to church. Both Julia and I feel badly. Hen hatched [ ]. Will try & raise them in house. Began to weigh & test Beauty's milk. Lambs (32).

Monday, February 15 [Mr. Otey went to Roanoke on a private car with old Mr. Patterson's remains and expected to meet Rev. Mr. Kirkus in Roanoke. Mr. Kirkus did not come.]<sup>15</sup>

Tuesday, February 16 [Mr. Otey still gone. I sat up until 12 PM expecting him. Hampton<sup>16</sup> brought down old cow Liz & took Jim Price's cow for his mother & old Keister to butcher. It weighed 928 lbs. at 3c. Little Jim Hoge rode Gyp home. Lambs (38).]

Wednesday, February 17 [Lost a fine ewe — been on frozen wheat & one ear of corn a day. Have lamb turned in flock. Jim Otey returned from Roanoke. Got a fine bargain in a suit and overcoat. Gave me a fountain pen. Jim and Dan Hoge<sup>17</sup> came out with him. Lambs (39).]

Thursday, February 18 [Another fat sheep dead from wheat field, left a fine lamb. Sheep dead. Had 62 - 4 = 58. Still frozen. Sowing grass seed. Hauling hay to cow barn. Set two hens. 18 Got 38 eggs today. Hattie Wall came down. We started to clean up in the garden. Jim Otey fencing & plowing.]

*Friday, February* 19 [Raining. Cut down big oak tree above bridge and burned a lot of brush on that hill. Mr. Hale came in on a fine horse. Ione<sup>19</sup> came to stay till Monday.]

<sup>15.</sup> Julia Otey wrote the entries for February 15– February 22. Therefore, I place each of those entries in square brackets.

<sup>16.</sup> John Hampton "Rusty" Hoge, Jr., the eldest son of the John Hampton Hoges. He married Katherine Eva Estes (1903–1995) in 1927 and spent most of his life in Blacksburg, where he managed the Otey/Hoge coal mines (with brothers Dan and Jim), farmed, and speculated in real estate.

<sup>17.</sup> Daniel Howe Hoge was the John Hampton Hoges' fourth child. He married Cornelia Frances Womble (1897–1977) in 1917 and spent all his adult life in the Army, rising to the rank of colonel.

<sup>18.</sup> Normally all the eggs in all the nests in a henhouse are collected each day for sale or use. One "sets" a hen by putting approximately seven to ten eggs in her nest, thus, in most cases, providing sufficient incentive for her to sit on the eggs. If the eggs have been fertilized, chicks will hatch in twenty-one days.

<sup>19.</sup> Ione Cary, the daughter of Wiltshire and Emma Cary.

Saturday, February 20 [Mr. Otey in town. Lulu sick, so spent the day. Harve Snider driving loads of rotten rails back & forth. Dan & Alice went up in milk wagon. Ione Cary with me.]

Sunday, February 21 [Mr. Otey in town. Five days of this week he has been away. Lulu has rheumatism. Dan went home on Saturday. Jim Otey was to stay if Lulu needed him. I miss him so. He spent the night in town as Lulu is no better.]

Monday, February 22 [Mr. Otey got home to dinner, but is going back. Lulu nervous. I took Ione Cary back to Forks. She had been with us since Friday. She is a quick teacher. Harve still driving loads of old rails.]

Tuesday, February 23 Mardi Gras. Julia & I drove up to Blacksburg. Found Lulu better. Julia remained with Lulu and I came home. It was a rainy day. Not much work on farm. I miss my sweet wife so much and I will go after her soon. In house all alone tonight.

Wednesday, February 24 Ash Wednesday. Raining yet. Three new lambs this AM. I read book "The Voice of the People." Then rode to Forks. Took old Mr. Mike Price some bread & meat & Apples. Old Mrs. Andy Surface<sup>20</sup> was buried there today. David Cloyd, Jr. wanted us to go home with him.<sup>21</sup>

Thursday, February 25 Cold, windy & snow. I will go to Town but do not expect Julia to come in this weather. Yes she did come. It was a cold, windy drive. Lulu better. Charlie Walker spent the night with us. I bought some patten hame<sup>22</sup> buckles from him.

Friday, February 26 Bright & cool, plows going. 3 men cleaning hillside above bridge. 46 lambs. Cook Mrs. Price gone on a day visit to Newport.

Saturday, February 27 Bright day. Jim Long<sup>23</sup> & P. P. Price fixed Plank fence between gate & Bridge. Plowed around land on top of hill.

<sup>20.</sup> The daughter of Christian B. Price and Hannah Kipps, Cyrena (Price) Surface (1824–1909) was the second wife of Andrew J. Surface (b. 1816), the son of Adam Surface and Agnes Price, whom he married in 1861.

<sup>21.</sup> The son of David McNutt Cloyd and Mary Buford Langhorne and a member of the V.P.I. class of 1904, David McNutt Cloyd, Jr. (1883–1964) and his wife Manie (Guthrie) Cloyd (1884–1971) were living at Riverside, their farm west of Price's Fork, just beyond the Cowan estate and about five miles from Walnut Spring. (Riverside was originally part of Gen. Gordon Cloyd's extensive holdings in Buchanan's Bottom.)

<sup>22.</sup> A hame is either of the two rigid pieces along the side of a horse's collar to which the traces are attached.

Telegraphed Mr. Coyner to send man on. Julia & I put sheep in rye on the hill.

Sunday, February 28 I drove to church in town. Spent day and expected to meet a farm hand at the train at 7:30 PM. But got a phone message from Mr. Coyner that the hand would not arrive until tomorrow PM. Cool & some snow in air. Alex and I went all over his farm.<sup>24</sup> Lulu not so well today.

Monday, March 1 Men cutting posts & got hay in. P. P. Price fixed up fence up the draft.<sup>25</sup> I drove in to town & met the Two men, Alex Ramsey & Jim Poston, an Irishman and a Scotsman. Both will work for me until I can get a place for one. We got home about 9 PM. Beautiful moonlight night.

Tuesday, March 2 Plows going. P. P. Price got a load of hay. New men not working. They walked to Town, back to Supper. Had manure put on garden. A clear day. Had stables cleaned out and wrote to Mary Cowan. The new men talk bright and amuse us very much.

Wednesday, March 3 We got the milk off and the rain commenced just as the new men went to work on the yard fence. They picked out seed potatoes. <sup>26</sup> I rode in to town on business at 3 PM. It was cold and windy. Got home at 6 PM. The new men did sing some songs for us tonight.

Thursday, March 4 Very cold, snow & wind. Men feeding sheep. John Cromer, a young man about 21 or 22, to be buried at Fair View.<sup>27</sup> He died in

<sup>23.</sup> James Richard "Jim Tucker" Long (1870–1952) was the son of William Henry Long and Rebecca Tolbert and the husband of Nannie Lou Surface (1873–1949), the daughter of Henry Raburn Surface and Virginia Ann Robinson. He owned a farm on the south side of Brush Mountain, north of present Old Creek Road, which adjoined the Helvey Place.

<sup>24.</sup> Originally encompassing the entire 212-acre tract that the Alex Blacks purchased from Arthur B. Dundas in 1896, the Black farm was located on both sides of present Harding Avenue in north Blacksburg. Kent Apperson (1892–1945) purchased the farm in the 1930s and developed an orchard there, which he called the Black Land Fruit Farm. The Apperson Park residential development is now located on that site.

<sup>25.</sup> The "draft" between North Hill and the graveyard field. Otey mentions this part of his farm a number of times, sometimes calling it the "draft," or (more often) the "draught," and sometimes referring to it as the "Beaver Dam."

<sup>26.</sup> Like seed corn, seed wheat, etc., seed potatoes are potatoes set aside for planting a new crop.

<sup>27.</sup> John Cromer (1887–1909) was the son of William Thomas "Tom" Cromer (1858–1922) and Virginia Ellen Shell (1861–1949). Fair View is now the New Mt. Zion Lutheran Church cemetery, located on the corner of present Mt. Zion and Poverty Creek Roads, in the Sunnyside community.

Roanoke City after an operation. Taft is to be inaugurated today.<sup>28</sup>

*Friday, March 5* Cold, bright day. Ramsey went with milk wagon and brought their trunks. He & Poston drove post holes for yard fence. Harve plowed. Julia and I drove up to her church<sup>29</sup> and a play. We enjoyed both and spent the night with Lou & Liz.

Saturday, March 6 Turning a hard wet snow. We drove home and the sheep & lambs had not been put up. I took men & put them in the shed. Too bad for work on farm. Capt. John T. Howe<sup>30</sup> was buried in Radford today.

Sunday, March 7 We did not go to church, as roads are so muddy. I wrote Mamie Patterson a long letter. Julia gave new men dinner. She & I took a walk and put sheep back in the hill field. Warmer & bright this afternoon. We are all well and happy. Lambs (50).

*Monday, March 8* Men worked Plowing 1/2.<sup>31</sup> Rained in afternoon. Julia sick in bed all day. I had post holes dug for Potato Patch.

*Tuesday, March* 9 Two men put hay in Barn, one digging post holes. I trimmed apple trees, smoked meat, and made potato patch larger.

Wednesday, March 10 Plowing. James B. Price & I dehorned a lot of young cattle. <sup>32</sup> Some for him and some for me. Belle & George (horses) ran off from John Harkness at Price's Fork but did not break the wagon.

Thursday, March 11 Mr. Kessinger & Testerman's Store<sup>33</sup> was burned at Price's Fork last night. Julia & I drove to Blacksburg. Cool & bright. Finished plowing Sod today. The men are putting in posts & manuring the garden, and Julia is mating the chickens.

<sup>28.</sup> On March 4, 1909, William Howard Taft (1857–1930) became the twenty-seventh President of the United States, beginning his one term in office, from 1909 until 1913.

<sup>29.</sup> An Episcopalian, Julia Otey usually attended Christ Episcopal Church in Blacksburg on Sunday mornings. Jim Otey sometimes accompanied her there, but, more often than not, attended the Blacksburg Baptist Church, where he was a deacon.

<sup>30.</sup> John Thomas Howe (1842–1909), a captain in the Confederate army during the Civil War and a cousin of the Hoges. He was wounded and captured at Gettysburg on July 3, 1863, and spent eighteen months at Johnson's Island Prison in Ohio. In 1866 Howe married Sallie Lewis DeJarnette (1848–1933).

<sup>31.</sup> Otey means the men plowed half the day.

<sup>32.</sup> In Otey's day both beef and dairy cattle were dehorned (typically with a dehorning saw) to prevent horn injuries. Today most beef cattle are polled (hornless), but most dairy cattle still have to be dehorned.

<sup>33.</sup> Once owned by James Bane Price and leased to Kessinger and Testerman, the store that burned was located in Price's Fork on a site adjacent to that presently occupied by Snuffy's General Store.

Friday, March 12 Got 2 hens. Nine chicks hatched. We mated 2 hens to see how they will turn out. Men plowed for oats & cut posts & dug holes. John Harkness & Julia began to clean yard. Sheep (57). Lambs (54).

Saturday, March 13 Rained in the AM. Men dug post holes on bridge hill. Sue & Vick cows came in with two bull calves. Kent Buford<sup>34</sup> came to visit.

Sunday, March 14 Cool & windy. Kent Buford, Julia & myself rode horseback to Aunt Margie's. Kent stopped with Jim & Maud. 35 We found Mary Cowan very sick. Cousin Liz Adams is there on a visit. Came home late. Stopped a few minutes with Jim & Maud.

Monday, March 15 Very cool. Two plows in oat field. The two new men & I put wire fence between orchard and yard. I found another sheep dead. Had a time with young Ewe & lamb. Got a mail bag full of mail today. Uncle Calvin came and played his graphophone.<sup>36</sup>

Tuesday, March 16 Alex Ramsey & Jim Poston finished digging holes in upper field. Put in posts around Potato patch. Harve and Hub are plowing oat land. I told the new men I did not need them any longer.

Wednesday, March 17 The new men left today for Richmond. I rode to Vicker & took train for Dublin & to Kent Buford's. Got a Mr. McDaniel for farm hand. Visited all the Bufords and spent night with Frank Bell. Enjoyed it all very much.

In December 1915, the two Cowan households traded places. The senior Cowans and Mary at that time moved into the clapboard "Cowan House," and the Jim Cowans moved into the homeplace. Maj. Cowan, however, kept a room in his old home and spent much of his time there for the remainder of his life. After Maj. Cowan, Margie, and Mary died, the John Putnam Adams family moved into Cowan House. Subsequently, the house was occupied by their descendants until 1986, when Virginia Tech acquired it, along with the surrounding 1,750 acres, which included both the Adams property (Upper Kentland Farm) and all the rest of the former Kent/Cowan estate. The house burned down a few years later.

<sup>34.</sup> Paschal Kent Buford (b. 1874), the son of Ike and Sallie Buford.

<sup>35.</sup> In 1909 Maj. Cowan, his wife Margie, and their unmarried daughter Mary lived in the old Kent/Cowan homeplace, and Jim Cowan, his wife, and children lived in a two-story white clapboard house (actually a log house underneath), east of the homeplace, on Tom's Creek, not far from where it empties into the New River. Located near Maj. Kent's old grist mill, which Maj. Cowan restored, that house had formerly served as the miller's residence. (Kent's Mill, later known as Cowan's Mill, is thought to have been the oldest mill in Montgomery County.)

<sup>36.</sup> An early type of phonograph.

Thusday, March 18 Frank Bell, Francis<sup>37</sup> & I took the train for Radford. We took dinner at Hotel,<sup>38</sup> and were at the horse sale all afternoon. Mary Cowan was on train for Richmond when I got on at 5:30 PM. Jim Bell came to Blacksburg. I reached home at 7:30 PM from Vicker riding Russet.<sup>39</sup>

Friday, March 19 Julia & I drove up to Dr. Black's to see Lucy, Bessie & Nellie Bell.<sup>40</sup> Mary Lou was having a tea so we remained. We were at Charlie Black's that evening. We spent the night with Lulu and took breakfast at Lizzie & Alex's. We enjoyed seeing the kin folks.

Saturday, March 20 Lizzie & Lulu left for a week in Roanoke. We drove home, Alice Hoge with us. Were very busy as we expected Mary Lou & Bessie to come spend the night on their way back from a visit to Aunt Margie. They did not come.

Sunday, March 21 Raining & snowing. I rode in on Russet to hear Mr. McCrea from China preach. Enjoyed his talk very much & got home for dinner. Julia & Alice indoors as the Snow is falling. Julia is reading a book on India.

Monday, March 22 Alice has mumps. Julia has a headache. I rode to Price's Fork. Paid Mr. Kessinger and Testerman their store account in full to date. Two more young lambs.

Tuesday, March 23 I rode to Charlie McDonald's to see if he had seed oats; did not have any. Got in a lot of bran & chop for cows. I am feeding 6 young calves, 3 heifers, 3 bulls. Cows are doing well.

Wednesday, March 24 Sent milk to creamery<sup>41</sup> by Harve Snider

- 37. The fourth child of Frank and Nellie Bell, Francis Bell, Jr. (1894–1963) married Stella Hogan Currie (1896–1969) in 1918. Before "old" Francis Bell died in 1898, Otey sometimes referred to Frank Bell as "Frank Bell, Jr.," but after that time he always called that Frank "Frank Bell" or "Frank Bell, Jr." and his son "Francis" or "Frank Bell, Jr."
- 38. Possibly Otey and the Bells dined at Delp's Hotel on First Street, about two blocks from the old 1889 toll bridge across the New River. Or they could have eaten at either the Dixie Hotel or the Alleghany Hotel, among others.
- 39. Before he owned an automobile, Otey often rode horseback or drove his buggy to Vicker, left his horse or horse and buggy there, took the train, then came home horseback or in his buggy after he returned to the depot.
- 40. "Lucy" is Lucy Gaines (Bentley) Hart, "Bessie" is Elizabeth (Arbuthnot) Bell, and "Nellie" is Ellen Gordon (Kent) Bell.
- 41. Each morning Otey and his farmhands milked the cows, ran the milk through a separator (a device that separated milk and cream), and, when school was in session, drove the milk and cream to the V.P.I. creamery in the basement of Price Hall. From September through May until 1914, when he sold most of his dairy herd V.P.I. got milk and cream from Otey on a daily basis.

and got a ton of fertilizer for oats. The Harrows are almost over oat field. John Harkness is cleaning the yard. One turkey hen missing this evening.

Thursday, March 25 Cold & windy and blowing snow all day. Did very little but feed & milk. Found turkey at Mr. Wall's. Had a good mail and enjoyed reading. Julia & Alice both up and very frisky. Cold tonight.

Friday, March 26 Alice's mumps came out on left side and she is right sick with it. Hub putting in posts around Potato patch.

Saturday, March 27 I rode down to Jim Cowan's to see if he had any good oats for seed. He & family were on a visit to Frank Bell. I got back early and nursed Alice while Julia slept.

Sunday, March 28 Cold & wet. We did not go to church. Alice much better. But has to stay indoors.

Monday, March 29 Julia & I, with Pet Price & Harve, put in the concrete block for separator and washed up the new separator. Had some logs taken to mill for gate slats.

*Tuesday, March 30* Five hens. Seventeen turkey eggs. Set 2 hens on brown leghorn eggs, 2 on turkey eggs, and one on odd eggs. I fixed the slides on barn doors.

Wednesday, March 31 I took Alice Hoge to Blacksburg and got oats, 20 bu., from Clait Linkous. Tested two cows. The wind is cold to-day. Hands cleaned up the hay lot in front field & fixed fences.

Saturday, April 3 Paid Mr. Smith \$3.00 for two pea hens.<sup>43</sup> Snowing & blustery day. Milk rate 4.03%. I can't imagine this wrong.<sup>44</sup>

Sunday, April 4 We drove to church. Bishop Tucker<sup>45</sup> preached.

<sup>42.</sup> Jim and Julia Otey frequently set turkeys as well as chickens, sometimes collecting turkey eggs from disparate (and often inconvenient) locations to put them together under a turkey, or sometimes a chicken, in a nest (at times the turkey's own nest, but more typically not). Raised exclusively for meat, turkeys were not confined, as were chickens, so they made their nests and laid their eggs wherever they chose. But turkey eggs, although neither sold nor consumed, were, of course, vital to the Oteys' poultry operation, so they monitored their turkeys closely, tracking them to their nests, keeping tabs on their eggs, and encouraging them to set.

<sup>43.</sup> The female or hen of the peafowl (Pavo cristatus).

<sup>44.</sup> Otey means that the butterfat content of his milk measured 4½%, a percentage so high that he wonders if the calculation is correct. The standard butterfat content for whole milk is 3½%; dairy farmers are paid more for milk with a higher percentage of butterfat.

<sup>45.</sup> The Rt. Rev. Beverley D. Tucker, Episcopal Bishop of Southern Virginia. Bishop Tucker delivered the baccalaureate sermon at V.P.I. on June 2, 1907.

Julia took dinner at Prof. Davidson's. 46 Jim Cowan was in town so he & I took dinner at Liz & Lou's. He came back to our gate with us, then went on home.

Monday, April 5 I sowed orchard grass on field back of Mrs. Hugh Price's. Mr. Henry Barnett<sup>47</sup> came to see me. Made Garden today. Put up new separator and it runs steady & true. Had new Gate made.

**Tuesday, April 6** Anniversary of our marriage of 1904. We are both well & happy. Planted a big Potato patch back of barn. Julia cleaned the yard with three children. The weather is fine for gardening.

Wednesday, April 7 Started disking corn field. Hub Snider not here. I fixed calf trough, then rode to Forks & phoned Dr. Spencer about Belle horse. It is windy and dry today.

Thursday, April 8 I sold J. B. Price 15 bushels of corn at 75c and Seymour Price<sup>48</sup> 2 bushels of oats at 60c. Sold Sheridan Price<sup>49</sup> clover seed, 12 1/2c per lb. Sold Sam Oliver clover seed. Got 25 bushels of coal from Graham's bank in Poverty.<sup>50</sup> Set white turkey on 18 eggs.

Friday, April 9 I took milk and cream to creamery and attended to lots of business. Jim Evans asked me about getting a road through my

<sup>46.</sup> Robert James Davidson (1862–1915) was a professor of chemistry and later dean of the scientific department at V.P.I. He married Anna McBryde (1868–1948), the daughter of John McLaren McBryde (1841–1923), who was V.P.I. president from 1891 until 1907, and Cora Bolton (1863–1920).

<sup>47.</sup> Henry C. Barnett (d. 1911) from the Barnett farm in the Horseshoe of the New River.

<sup>48.</sup> The son of Hughey Price and Mary Henrietta Stanger, Gilbert Seymour "Sey" Price (1874–1956) married Louisa Katherine "Kate" Saville (1890–1988), the daughter of Walter H. Saville and Henrietta J. "Ett" Cromer, owned a general store (later "Nutter's Store") on Tom's Creek, hauled and sold coal, and operated a farm adjacent to the southwest end of Walnut Spring. His house was located on a hill immediately south of and overlooking Tom's Creek.

<sup>49.</sup> Sheridan W. Price (1866–1930), the son of Enos Elias Price and Sarah Elizabeth Cromer. Sheridan Price inherited his parents' homeplace on present Old Creek Road, worked as a store clerk for Seymour Price, later operated his own general store on present Old Creek Road, and owned an interest in both the Brush Mountain millstone quarry and several local coal mines.

<sup>50.</sup> Otey refers to coal mined in Poverty Hollow, northwest of Sunnyside, by Hubert Bryant Graham (1888–1954), a Brush Mountain coal miner who married Minnie Mae Cooper (1895–1976). The Hubert Grahams were the parents of William Thomas "Tom" Graham (1911–1997), who owned the property at the west end of Walnut Spring now owned by his son William Hubert "Billy" Graham.

farm. Dr. Quick<sup>51</sup> drove into town with me. Mrs. Charles McDonald & her two Boys<sup>52</sup> here tonight with Jim Hoge.

Saturday, April 10 Sold Bob Olinger<sup>53</sup> 15 bu. of corn. Hay & corn to Martin Price.<sup>54</sup> Hay to Bob Reid. Alex, Liz, Lulu & family, Mrs. Mary Irby Black and Mrs. C. W. Black, Jim & Maud Cowan, Mrs. C. B. McDonald & children all took dinner here today.

Sunday, April 11 We drove Mrs. McDonald by her home & went on to Church in Town. Francis & Gordon Bell<sup>55</sup> are with us tonight. It is cold but Clear & Bright.

Monday, April 12 Put hay stack in cow barn. Cleaned meadows. Sarah Bell cow<sup>56</sup> had a bull calf. Gordon & Francis Bell went home today. Julia had a bad headache all day. Easter cards from Mamie & Zelle. Good mail.

Tuesday, April 13 Men cleaned meadows until 12 o'clock when rain stopped them. I fixed milk wagon and did odd jobs. I am so disappointed that I did not go to the V.P.I. German tonight.<sup>57</sup> Little boys caught a lot of nice fish and we enjoyed them at supper. Poky has a calf.

- 51. Dr. Walter Jacob Quick, who in 1907 became dean of the agriculture department at V.P.I.
- 52. James Richard McDonald (1901–1993) and Charles Gordon McDonald (1908–1972). Richard McDonald married Ruth Anna Reynolds (1895–1983) and lived much of his adult life at Green Hill, the original McDonald homeplace, built by Joseph McDonald in the mid-eighteenth century and now owned and occupied by the Richard McDonalds' son and daughter-in-law, Mr. and Mrs. James Lewyn McDonald. Gordon McDonald married Mary Farmer and inherited his parents' home between Green Hill and what is now Glade Road.
- 53. Robert L. "Bob" Olinger (b. 1868) was the son of Christian Phillip Olinger and Susannah Elizabeth Price. He married first Mary Gordon Dudley (b. 1876) and second Alice Hands, operated a general store in Price's Fork, and sold Brush Mountain millstones for grist mills.
- 54. Taylor Martin Price (b. 1875) was the son of Jonas Henry Price and Louisa Ann Snider. His family owned a farm and mountain land in the Sunnyside community, on present Old Creek and Mt. Zion Roads.
- 55. Gordon Cloyd Bell (1892–1963) was the Frank Bells' second child. He married first Mary Withrow (1892–1938), in 1918, and second Lucy King (1901–1990), in 1942.
- 56. Otey frequently named cows and horses for people, often family members and neighbors.
- 57. According to Henry Temple, the V.P.I. German Club's 1909 Easter German was actually held in German Hall on the evening of April 12 (see Henry Downing Temple, The Bugle's Echo: A Chronology of Cadet Life at the Military College at Blacksburg, Virginia, The Virginia Polytechnic Institute, 6 vols. [Blacksburg, Va.: The Virginia Tech Corps of Cadets, Inc., 1996 –2001], 3: 1304). John Porter Jones ('09), of Culpeper, and Isabelle Ruther-



Otey, Elizabeth Kent Otey Black, Louisa Virginia Otey Hoge's children, and Mary Gordon Otey Patterson's children in the family carriage, 1904. Otey rode to White Sulphur Springs in this carriage in 1866, when he was four years old.

Wednesday, April 14 Sold Link Sheppard<sup>58</sup> a load of hay for \$6.00. Good rain last night. Creek full. Have lost my pocketbook. I rode to Blacksburg, looked in church for pocketbook, but could not find it. Got home about 6 PM. Separated milk and fed calves.

Thursday, April 15 Sold corn to P. P. Price & 6 bushels to Martin Price @ 75c. Put hay in barn. Cleaned up stack lots<sup>59</sup> off of meadows.

ford led the opening figure, as cadets and their dates danced to the music of Blackburn's Orchestra. A dance club founded in 1893 and still active today, the German Club (together with its rival, the Cotillion Club) provided much of the social life for V.P.I. students during the school's early years. Although Otey usually "danced German" (i.e., attended the German Club dances), he was in fact an honorary member of both the German Club and the Cotillion Club.

<sup>58.</sup> Taylor Lincoln "Linc" Shepherd (1872–1925) was the son of Phillip Christian Shepherd, Jr. and Mary Catherine Cromer.

<sup>59.</sup> Stack lots or stack yards were fenced-off areas where haystacks and wheatstacks were kept.

I got Turkey hen, our own stock, & sheep from Mr. Wall's. Borrowed Wall's hog for a while.<sup>60</sup> Put sheep in mountain field. Sold Jack Long<sup>61</sup> 1½ bu. of corn.

*Friday, April* 16 Sold 6 bu. of corn to Harvey Olinger.<sup>62</sup> Disking corn land, finished it. I rode to Forks. Looked over farm. Julia found her turkey nest on top of Walls' hay stack. Boys caught more fish. Milking 18 cows & feeding 10 calves. Warm & bright today.

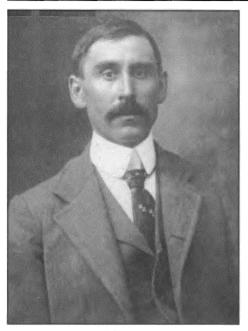
Saturday, April 17 Warm & bright. Harrows going and I am pushing work on the corn land. I cut up old apple tree in Garden. Milked & separated about 10 gallons of milk. John Harkness & Mrs. John Price do the milking.

Sunday, April 18 We attended the Baptist church in Blacksburg. Took dinner with Alex & Lizzie and spent the day. Had a pleasant drive home after a shower that freshened up everything. Got home around 6 PM.

Monday, April 19 Harrows going. Guy Shealor, 63 John Harkness, & I put up wire fence in upper meadow & front field. A pretty day and got lots of work done. I put back our woods gate.

Tuesday, April 20 Worked on wire fence until rain ran us in. I got so wet, had to change clothes. Read a story this afternoon. Sold Matt Price 7 bu. of corn. Cows coming up in milk.

- 60. The Mr. Wall to whom Otey refers is possibly Pharis Wall, but more likely his son James Lee Wall (1864–1947), who, in 1910, inherited much of his father's farm and lived in the family home. Mr. and Mrs. Joseph A. Wall, James Lee Wall's son- and daughter-in-law, presently live on Walnut Spring Road in Blacksburg, on part of the original Willow Springs Farm.
  - Otey undoubtedly borrowed Wall's boar to breed one or more of his sows.
- 61. The son of Sarah Long and a former slave named Burk, Jackson "Jack" Long (1870–1954) married Mary Jackson (1871–1948), Polly Jackson's daughter and Christina Kyle's niece. The parents of twelve children, Jack and Mary Long built a two-room log house near the Otey coal mines, but their neighbors ultimately forced them to leave. (Malissia Surface later used the house the Longs abandoned as a schoolhouse.) Subsequently, in, 1912, Cloyd Otey gave the Longs a piece of land on Tom's Creek, where Jack Long built a larger log house he and his wife occupied the rest of their lives. Otey sometimes refers collectively to the Longs' male children, several of whom worked at Walnut Spring, as the "Jack Long boys."
- 62. Harvey Black "Harve" Olinger (1877–1967) was the son of the Christian P. Olingers. In 1913 he married Sarah Mae Fisher (1890–1963), the daughter of Radford P. "Rad" Fisher and Arminta Frances Price. Harve Olinger lived on top of "Sign Board Hill," adjacent to what is now Olinger Road, off present Brooksfield Road, south of the Tom's Creek community.
- 63. Guy French Shealor (1891–1930) was the son of David Daniel Shealor (1857–1925) and Lewiza Charlotte Price (1862–1916). He married Carrie B. Graves (1897–1967).





James Lee Wall and Dora Myrtle (Price) Wall. (Photograph courtesy of Mr. and Mrs. Joseph A. Wall.)

Wednesday, April 21 Threatening rain. I drove to Vicker and took the train for Radford. Took dinner at Gov. Tyler's,<sup>64</sup> and he and I drove

64. The son of George Tyler and Eliza Hoge, James Hoge Tyler (1846–1925) was Governor of Virginia from 1898 until 1902. Reared by his grandparents, Gen. James Hoge (1783–1861) and Eleanor (Howe) Hoge (1792–1856), Hoge Tyler was Julia (Tyler) Otey's half brother and John Hampton Hoge's first cousin. In 1868 he married Sue Montgomery Hammet (1845–1927), the daughter of Col. Edward Hammet and Clementine Venable Craig. Otey visited Tyler in Radford at his home "Halwick" (located at the end of Tyler Avenue, formerly Commerce Street), to which he retired after leaving the governor's mansion.

When Jim Otey and the former governor's sister became engaged, in 1903, Tyler remarked that he would not believe her married until he saw it with his own eyes. Apparently Julia had disappointed a number of suitors in the past, but her brother did indeed see her wed this time, when he gave her to Otey in marriage the following April. Tyler and Otey liked each other from first acquaintance, and they became good friends. On February 17, 1904, Tyler wrote to his sister about Otey and her impending nuptials, teasing her a bit but also firmly stamping her prospective bridegroom with his approval: "I saw Jim a few days ago in Roanoke.... I think you have made a good choice. Certainly none of your [other] beaux are comparable to him as a first-rate, high-minded, honorable & polished gentleman, & with your bossy & stimulating powers to direct & help things along, you will both do well."

Julia Otey was always inordinately proud of both her famous brother and

to Judge Cassell's<sup>65</sup> and bought seed corn. We drove to Depot and I took train at 5 PM. Got home at 8 PM. Deaf man called to see us.

Thursday, April 22 I have 4 plows laying off the corn field. I put the cows in Mountain field. Salted sheep. Sold cow Alexis to Mr. L. D. Keadle of Radford. Hattie Wall milked a cow for me this evening. She is a splendid milker. John Harkness is sick.

Friday, April 23 Rained hard last night. Too wet to plant corn. Sent Harve to Vicker for seed corn. 66 I fixed fences. Drove to town & brought Mary Bell & Frank Abbott 67 out here. Julia had a good supper. Frank sang.

Saturday, April 24 All four of us drove to Jim Cowan's. They were not home. We got home about 2 PM. Enjoyed a good dinner. I took Frank Abbott to Town in the buggy. Mary Bell drove back with a Stewart. Jeff Wolf & family<sup>68</sup> are coming. I paid for my phone to be put in.

Sunday, April 25 I did not go to church but had a quiet day's rest at home. Rather cool and we have a fire in our room.

Monday, April 26 I had 12 men planting corn today in the grave-yard.<sup>69</sup> We finished at 4 PM. then got old apple tree out of garden, then milked 19 cows and separated the milk. Got about 6 gal. of nice cream.

their father. It must have pleased her greatly, then, when her cousin Alice M. Finch, in an April 10, 1907 letter, compared the two in language highly flattering to each. "I saw something of Cousin Hoge [Tyler] and family when they were in Richmond," she wrote. "He is like your father. The same genial, old fashioned Virginia gentleman — a type that, sadly, is fast dying out."

- 65. Previously an attorney in Pulaski County, George E. Cassell was a prominent judge in Radford, where he lived with his wife Kate. (In 1889, in the case of Hicks versus Commonwealth, Cassell and John Hampton Hoge argued for the defense before the Supreme Court of Virginia.)
- 66. Otey sent Harve Snider to the Vicker Mill, located not far from the Vicker's Switch railroad depot.
- 67. Mary Bell is Mary Peck Bell.

Francis Harris "Frank" Abbott was an associate professor of rhetoric at V.P.I. An accomplished and active musician, Abbott directed the V.P.I. Glee Club and was in demand wherever theatricals or other entertainments were gotten up, either in town or on campus. In 1910 he left Blacksburg to teach at a boys' preparatory school just outside Baltimore.

- 68. Jeff Wolf, his wife Nannie, and his brother Roy, who were apparently not natives of Montgomery County, came to Walnut Spring to work for Otey in April 1909. The Wolfs left Otey's employ in less than a year, and they disappear entirely from the diaries until November 1926, when Nannie Wolf reappears in Blacksburg.
- 69. The graveyard field.

Tuesday, April 27 Two hens on turkey eggs to hatch. 17 eggs, hatched 15, raised 13. Plowed Nannie Wolf's garden. Had two men & team<sup>70</sup> all day putting manure on corn patch in garden. Jeff Wolf & Roy came and worked on their house all day.

Wednesday, April 28 Planted government corn<sup>71</sup> in garden. Harve & Hub plowing new ground. Roy Wolf took milk to Town and brought back roofing, a sack of salt, and some of their things. Put sheep in field back of orchard. Guy Shealor & I staked the wheat field fence. Julia went fishing.

Thursday, April 29 I had fence fixed around corn field. Jeff & Nannie Wolf came late this afternoon. I bought 1/2 nice lamb from James B. Price. Had fish for supper.

Friday, April 30 Raining a beautiful summer rain. Roy Wolf let George horse break shaves<sup>72</sup> to the milk wagon. Nannie Wolf is getting fixed in her house. The creek is high.

Saturday, May 1 Rained hard this AM and has turned very cool. Jeff & Roy Wolf took both farm wagons to town after their household goods. Dan Hoge brought the white cow home.

**Sunday, May 2** Bright & cool. Roads are muddy. We did not drive in to church. Dan is with us today. Beverley Lamb, a Mr. Berkeley, and a Mr. Anderson called. They are students at V.P.I.<sup>73</sup> Milking done quietly this afternoon.

Monday, May 3 John Harkness left today for Philadelphia. Dan Hoge took his Mamma's cow home. Jeff Wolf and Harve Snider put roofing on Jeff's home and also put up a flue. Julia & I called in town and attended to a lot of business. She got a Hat.

Tuesday, May 4 Up early and milking over soon. Jeff & Nannie gone to housekeeping today. Roy & I put three loads of wood at their house. One at Mrs. Price's. John Price cut a big load of stove wood at my house. Rained some this PM. Not as cool as has been.

<sup>70.</sup> A team of horses, two (or sometimes more) horses harnessed to the same vehicle, plow, etc.

<sup>71.</sup> Probably an improved corn variety distributed to farmers by the federal government.

<sup>72.</sup> Shafts that attached to the wagon on either side and also to the horse's collar. These slender, shaped pieces of wood served as a brake to hold the wagon back from the horse when going downhill.

<sup>73.</sup> Frank Beverley Lamb was a member of the V.P.I. class of 1910.

Mr. Berkeley was either John Campbell Berkeley or George Iverson Berkeley, both members of the class of 1911.

There were three Andersons at V.P.I. in the spring of 1909, Joseph Mason Anderson ('09), Edward Randolph Anderson ('12), and Frank McDaniel Anderson ('12).

Wednesday, May 5 Found sheep dead with a lamb about one month old. I salted all stock. Found my pocketbook and all in it just as I lost it. \$25.00 was in it. I planted 8 hills of cantaloupes in potato patch on branch back of Barn.

Thursday, May 6 8 turkey eggs, hatched 14, raised 9. White turkey hen due to hatch. Commenced scraping walls in Dining room. Dr. & Mrs. Hudnall<sup>74</sup> called. I rode to Forks and worked the garden. Harve planted corn in field near road at Sheppards'. Hatched 14 turkeys.

Friday, May 7 I had Pumpkin seed planted in new ground, fixed the pig pen, put up curtains, and got hogs in out of the rain. It did not rain much. Jeff & Nannie making garden.

**Saturday, May 8** Old Granny Wall cow had a heifer calf. We all worked hard on dining room walls and painted the washboard. Cows falling off some in milk. Sold Martin Price \$9.00 in meat. The men are working hard to get new ground corn in.

Sunday, May 9 Roy & I rode horseback to church in Town. Mr. Jackson<sup>76</sup> preached such a good Sermon. I spent the day at Alex's and rode home after 5 PM. It is a beautiful day. Julia has watched her young Turkeys all day.

Monday, May 10 Rained hard last night and we lost 4 gals. of nice cream by water overflowing in spring house.<sup>77</sup> Put matting down in dining room, painted and nearly finished walls. Lost another old Sheep today. Tried to feed young calf.

Tuesday, May 11 After doing lots of odd jobs around house, I got into the Trap, drove to Christiansburg and left Trap to be painted. Bought

- 74. Richard Henry Hudnall was a professor of English at V.P.I., where he joined the faculty in 1898. Dr. Hudnall held a master's degree from the University of Virginia and a doctorate from the University of Leipzig and had previously taught at Mississippi College (now the University of Mississippi).
- 75. The baseboard.
- 76. Dr. Eugene B. Jackson was a chaplain at V.P.I. and pastor of the Blacksburg Baptist Church from 1905 until 1912. In 1916 Jackson became a trustee of the University of Richmond, a position he held for thirty-five years. At one time he was also chaplain of the United States Senate.
- 77. To prevent spoiling, the Oteys kept the milk and cream they reserved for their own use in the springhouse. Located northwest of the house and directly west of the icehouse, the springhouse straddled a branch that flows south from its point of origin about seventy-five yards from the springhouse. Since the milk and cream were stored in crocks partially submerged in the branch, those crocks had to be moved to a concrete slab above the water during hard rains. Otherwise, the rising water would overflow the crocks and ruin the milk and cream.

new buggy. Drove home by 7 PM. Julia finished the dining room and had the back hall and kitchen whitewashed.

Wednesday, May 12 Jeff Wolf and I finished wire fence & put on gate to his yard. Julia had kitchen whitewashed & back pantry cleaned & paper taken off wall. Pulled the feathers out of two Peacock tails. Nannie set 3 hens. I looked over corn field.

Thursday, May 13 I put a window pane in the dining room. Planted beans, corn, peas, cucumbers, butter beans, cushaw;<sup>78</sup> worked the ground well. I am very tired tonight. Harve has most of new ground planted. Julia had a lot of house cleaning done.

Friday, May 14 I took milk to creamery, had Butterfly shod. Aunt Margie, Lizzie & Putnam Adams family came to visit us. Jeff Wolf is harrowing corn in graveyard field. Harve Snider finished planting corn in new ground.

Saturday, May 15 I had plow run in corn field to stop it washing. Lizzie Black, Lulu Hoge & Dan, Liz,<sup>79</sup> & Jim came out and spent the day. We have had a happy, pleasant day. Dan & Jim stayed. Put, the boys, & I went fishing. I got thermal underwear today.

Sunday, May 16 Aunt Margie drove to church with me in my new buggy. Putnam & family drove up in their carriage. Mr. Jackson preached and I got home about 1 PM. Julia's head is feeling better. Pretty day.

Monday, May 17 The men sheared 54 sheep (Jeff Wolf & Staples Price). I sent Mr. Nelson<sup>80</sup> 4 old hams at 25c per lb. They weighed 58 lbs. He asked if I had more. I have them and they are going fast at 25c per lb.

Tuesday, May 18 Sent wool to Town to William Lybrook.81 Julia &

<sup>78.</sup> A variety of crookneck squash (Cucurbita moschata) of the gourd family.

<sup>79.</sup> Elizabeth Otey "Liz Otey" Hoge (1895–1980), the John Hampton Hoges' "middle" daughter. In 1920 she married Walter Stephenson Newman (1895–1978), of Woodstock, Virginia, who became the tenth president of V.P.I. in 1947, and held that position until 1962.

<sup>80.</sup> Originally from Newport, Kentucky, and a good friend of the Oteys, Rev. Robert B. Nelson was rector of Christ Episcopal Church from January 1, 1908, when he succeeded Rev. Dr. A.J. Nock, until 1919. In the early 1890s, Rev. Nelson was captain of the football team at the University of Virginia, where he also starred in baseball and track, and in 1908 he coached the V.P.I. track squad. According to the Virginia census, he was 38 years old in 1910.

<sup>81.</sup> William Murray Lybrook (1862–1925) owned a general store in Blacksburg, on Main Street, in the approximate location now occupied by the building that houses the Underground Pub. A longtime deacon of the Blacksburg Presbyterian Church, Lybrook married Ida Chapman, from Giles County. Their son William M. Lybrook,

I drove up to the play "As You Like It" on V.P.I. campus.<sup>82</sup> Gov. Tyler & Lily<sup>83</sup> came home with us. We all enjoyed the play. Julia had a good Supper.

Wednesday, May 19 Jeff Wolf plowed corn & potatoes with the new cultivator I got from Anderson and Borden yesterday. Ex-Gov. J. Hoge Tyler & Lily left for home this afternoon. We enjoyed their visit. I worked hard in garden all evening.

Thursday, May 20 Raining and we all got a lot of indoor work done. I looked up tools and put them in office. Julia has had a wet day with little chicks and Turkeys. Dan & Jim Hoge helped her some.

Friday, May 21 Raining yet. Creek high but not over meadows. I worked indoors most all day. Roy took cream to town. We all took dinner with Nannie Wolf at 7 PM. It was a good dinner. She had the house so clean and nice looking. We came home about 9 PM. Roy was 17 today.

Saturday, May 22 After getting the cream off to V.P.I., I put up a stove in the Separating house and Scrubbed and cleaned everything good. Cleaned the Separator with gasoline. Julia in bed all day.<sup>84</sup> Attended to chickens & Turkeys for her. Set out 100 Sweet potato plants.

Jr. was a member of the V.P.I. class of 1918, though he actually graduated in 1921. In 1916 William Lybrook's brother John B. Lybrook, Jr., previously in the newspaper business in Washington, D.C., founded the *Home News*, an eight-page Blacksburg weekly. (Apparently John Lybrook, Jr. was also involved to some extent in William Lybrook's general store business, as was Samuel M. Lybrook, another brother.) John B. Lybrook, Sr. (1820–1892), Mayor of Blacksburg on three occasions, owned Lybrook Row, a single-storied, many-roomed frame building, which stood on the north side of Church Street, between Roanoke Street and the present site of Christ Episcopal Church. Also dubbed "Buzzards' Roost" and "Hell Row," Lybrook's building provided lodging for many V.P.I. students during the school's early days. William M. Lybrook's Cheap Cash Store stood at the end of Lybrook Row, facing Roanoke Street.

- 82. Brought to V.P.I. by the Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg, the Ben Greet Shakespearean Players performed As You Like It on the afternoon of May 18 and The Taming of the Shrew the same evening.
- 83. Named for her mother Eliza Hoge, Eliza "Lily" Tyler (b. 1882) was the James Hoge Tylers' youngest child. In 1915 she married Henry Harrison Wilson (1885-1933).
- 84. Julia Otey had a weak heart, as well as high blood pressure, and was often confined to her bed. She actually had a number of heart attacks, the last of which, in May 1921, proved fatal. All the same, though one makes allowances for her heart condition and her high blood pressure, Mrs. Otey appears to have been unwell more than one would expect. Perhaps her chronic indisposition owed something to the frailty almost expected of Victorian ladies. She worked hard when up and about, however, and was never shy about tackling farm and household chores of almost any description.

**Sunday, May 23** Bright pretty day. We did not drive in to church as it was very muddy. I got on Russet and started to church at Price's Fork but heard there was no preacher so came back. Julia gave Dan, Jim, & myself a good luncheon.

Monday, May 24 Got in more coal from Poverty bank. Stocked peas and did other work in garden. Julia & I drove to Town. She attended a meeting of the D.C.<sup>85</sup> and I to business. Lizzie Black & the children drove part of the way home with us.

Tuesday, May 25 Raining all day. We commenced fixing walls in front hall. Jim Price & I fixed up an old book case. Cows gave a lot of good milk. Bonnie took Hale's horse. 86 Turkeys and Ducks standing in rain. We had a good spring dinner, strawberries and fried chicken.

Wednesday, May 26 Salted sheep & counted Lambs, 60. I went to see Jim Lee Wall to get him to take a Phone. He did not take it. I rode to Forks & attended to business. Hard rain this afternoon. I read a book while it rained.

Saturday, May 29 I worked the garden, put up a screen door, and had fence fixed around corn field. We want to drive to Radford this afternoon. We left home at 3:30 PM & got to Gov. Tyler's for Supper at 7 PM. Big-tit had a heifer calf.

**Sunday, May 30** We are at Gov. Tyler's. Julia drove to Sunday school with the family. We all attended service at 8 PM. Enjoyed it. Rev. Erwin preached.<sup>87</sup> We all enjoyed talking on porch until bed time. They are a lovely family.

Monday, May 31 We called at Judge Cassell's. Did some shopping, and drove to Mrs. Mc Ingles to dinner. John Ingles & wife were there.<sup>88</sup>

<sup>85.</sup> Otey means the U. D. C. Julia Otey belonged to the Dr. Harvey Black Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy.

<sup>86.</sup> Bonnie was one of Otey's mares. When Otey says a mare "took" a horse, he means that he had the mare bred.

<sup>87.</sup> The Tylers attended the Central Presbyterian Church, later the Tyler Memorial Presbyterian Church, located near Halwick on what is now the Radford University campus. Rev. L.W. Irwin was minister there from 1897 until 1909.

<sup>88. &</sup>quot;Mrs. Mc Ingles" (sometimes Otey calls her "Mrs. Mack Ingles") is Angeline (Harvey) Ingles (1856–1934), the widow of McClanahan Ingles (1842–1907). Mrs. McClanahan Ingles lived at Ingleside, the historic Ingles home now owned by Mr. and Mrs. Lewis Ingles Jeffries.

John Ingles (1874–1947) was the eldest child of McClanahan and Angeline Ingles; his wife was the former Elizabeth "Betty" Robinson from Wythe County.

Two parties in two Automobiles stopped & spent the afternoon. They left at 5:30 PM for Graham's Forge 30 miles west of there.

Tuesday, June 1 I drove to Aunt Margie Cowan's. Spent the day with them and got home about 6 PM. Found all going on well. Nannie and Jeff Wolf & Mrs. Price had taken good care of things. I found all my lambs, 60 in all. Dolly had a heifer calf today.

Wednesday, June 2 I salted stock & counted sheep & lambs. Two men came and inspected my dairy.<sup>89</sup> Julia has Roy & Nannie cleaning up the spring house good fashion. Dan Hoge came out in milk wagon.

Thursday, June 3 Raining all day long. I cut grass and weeds along path to spring house. Julia cleaned spring house and put stove outside.

Friday, June 4 Jeff Wolf & Harve Snider put up fence around the Spring in graveyard field. I rode Russet to Town and had her shod all around. I took Supper at Otley<sup>90</sup> with Mamie and Mary Patterson and rode home by moonlight.

**Saturday, June 5** I moved sheep back in the field and thinned corn in the garden. Dr. Spencer came to see me. Put out more Tomato plants.

**Sunday, June 6** Julia, Dan & I drove to Church in Town. Took dinner with Lulu Hoge. Jim Cowan and his Pa were there too. We all drove up to Otley and spent the afternoon. We got home at 7 PM.

Monday, June 7 I shipped 87 Lambs to William H. Trollinger.<sup>91</sup> Dan & Jim Hoge helped me take them to Price's Fork. Got over corn Second time and turned back on it. Worked in garden. It has been a beautiful day.

Tuesday, June 8 Turkey in orchard due to hatch. Julia & I got off to Roanoke early. Had to wait for train at Vicker 1 1/2 hours. Were very hurried in the city and stopped by hail storm between Shawsville & Mont-

<sup>89.</sup> The examination of dairies by state inspectors was quite new in 1909. Barns were inspected for cleanliness and dairy herds were tested for tuberculosis and other health risks.

<sup>90.</sup> Otley was the summer home Robert and Mamie Patterson built in Blacksburg, near the end of what is presently Washington Street. ("Otey" was originally "Otley"; the name changed some time after family members emigrated from England.) The Pattersons lived in Philadelphia from September through May, but Mamie Patterson and the children visited Blacksburg whenever they could and were always there during June, July, and August. Robert Patterson's position with the Pennsylvania Railway required him to be in Philadelphia most of the time, but he too came to Blacksburg for much of each summer.

<sup>91.</sup> William Hoge Trollinger (b. 1871) was the son of Henry C. Trollinger and Henrietta M. Miller. In 1892 he married Ann M. Price.

gomery. Drove home in the rain & storm all the way from Vicker and got home at 8 3/4 PM. We enjoyed our supper.

Wednesday, June 9 Turkey in the garden hatched 9. Rain made us do indoor work, window screens and so on. Killed a nice lamb. Julia walked up to Mr. Wall's. Dan & Jim missed her on way home.

Thursday, June 10 Dan & Harve Snider went to Christiansburg to get the Trap, but it was not finished. Jim Hoge & Roy Wolf took cream to Town. Louise Hoge got home from school today. Had several showers, too wet to work ground. Cut weeds & thinned corn. Screen door off back hall.

Friday, June 11 We are plowing corn the second time. Julia & I called on McBrydes. 93 I attended the German 94 and we drove home after 12 o'clock at night. Lots of pretty girls at German.

Saturday, June 12 Men thinned corn, then mowed yard and driveway. Dan & I put up some of the Hay late in evening. Mr. McConkley came to see about the Miller cows. My new hat Put ordered came.

Sunday, June 13 We drove to hear Sermon at the college. Took dinner at Dr. Spencer's. Stayed at Lulu & Lizzie's a while. Brought Dan Hoge and Robert Patterson home with us. We got home around 7 PM.

Monday, June 14 Men thinning corn. I sent Put his hat. I rode to Forks. Liked to have been caught in a hard rain. Julia & I drove to Ger-

<sup>92.</sup> The eldest of the six Hoge children, Louise Kent "Tick" Hoge (1891–1962) attended a school for the deaf and blind. Apparently a blow to the head suffered as a baby, when she fell to the floor from a four-poster bed at Walnut Spring, left her deaf. Her nickname was occasioned by her first word, "tick," apparently spoken in response to or imitation of the ticking sound made by the pendulum of a grandfather clock. In 1930 she married William E. V. Brogan (1892–1959).

<sup>93.</sup> A native of South Carolina, where he held the presidency of South Carolina College (now the University of South Carolina), and often called "the father of V.P.I.," John M. McBryde was the fifth president of V.A.M.C. and was largely responsible for reorganizing that school and transforming it into V.P.I. After Dr. McBryde left the V.P.I. presidency, the McBrydes bought and moved into a large, two-story frame home, now known as the McBryde House, across Price's Fork Road from campus, just east of the present site of the Four Points by Sheraton.

<sup>94.</sup> The commencement Junior-Senior German, a dance given annually by the junior class to honor the graduating seniors.

<sup>95.</sup> Rev. Dr. Collins Denny of Vanderbilt University delivered the 1909 baccalaureate sermon.

<sup>96.</sup> Robert Masquel Patterson, Jr. (b. 1895) was the youngest of Robert and Mamie Patterson's children.

man at college.<sup>97</sup> She spent the rest of night at Lulu's. Hampton Hoge & I drove home, got to bed around 3 AM.

Tuesday, June 15 Cow Margie has a heifer calf. Everybody on farm up early to get work done up and off to Sham Battle at the college. Hampton, Dan & Robert Patterson with us. I met lots of old boys at the Alumni meetings. Big crowd out all day long.

Wednesday, June 16 Finished thinning corn. Milked sheep again.<sup>99</sup> Had some manure hauled out, fed baby calf. Jeff & I washed Belle mare's head. Had ford log put back. Had gate fixed that Sam Jones<sup>100</sup> broke.

Thursday, June 17 Jim Lee Wall's baby died last night<sup>101</sup> and was buried today at 4. I helped to dig the grave. Men plowing corn in new ground. Jeff made more window screens. Julia in bed all day. Rained.

*Friday, June 18* [I advised Jim earnestly to sow grass & clover when he puts in wheat to secure a straw, J.T.O.] <sup>102</sup> Plowed corn in garden. Salted all the stock. And I helped milk and the cream went up much in weight. Roy drove Butterfly in milk buggy with the cream.

<sup>97.</sup> Commencing at 9:00 a.m., this was a Monday morning dance sponsored by the V.P.I. German Club.

<sup>98.</sup> For many years commencement ceremonies at V.P.I. included a sham battle, a mock military engagement staged by the cadet corps. Much appreciated by the people of Blacksburg and surrounding communities, sham battles, as Harry Temple describes them, always featured "the rattle of musketry" and "the roar of cannon," and often excited dogs and children running around the "battlefield" as well. The cadets used up more powder and supplies than usual during the 1909 sham battle, necessitating a petition to the board of visitors for an additional \$250 to cover costs (Temple, 2: 764, 1317).

<sup>99.</sup> Since Otey had recently sold his lambs, his ewes, no longer nursing, had udders swollen with milk. At such times Otey milked his sheep to relieve the pressure and reduce the edema.

<sup>100.</sup> Sam Jones was a notoriously obstreperous bull.

<sup>101.</sup> The baby was Jamie Lee Wall, who was born on February 3, 1909, and died on June 16 the same year.

<sup>102.</sup> Julia Otey wrote this sentence, which I place in square brackets, beside her husband's June 18 entry. Her advice to Otey to mix in grass (orchard grass) and clover when he sows winter wheat later in the summer, most likely in August, is sound on two counts. First, clover produces nitrogen, which would boost the wheat during the winter and spring and thus promote a better wheat crop the following June or July. And, second, orchard grass cures better than clover and would promote a hay crop more likely to dry quickly (thus, perhaps, avoiding a problem with mildew) the following August or September. A field sown in wheat, orchard grass, and clover would yield two separate crops, wheat in mid-summer and hay a couple of months thereafter. Furthermore, like other farmers, Otey fed straw as well as hay



Otey, Hoge children, Alexander and Elizabeth Black, and others at the Blacks' house in Blacksburg, circa 1903. Beginning at the extreme left: unidentified woman; James Armistead Otey, sitting on the railing; Alice Dunbar Hoge, child on railing; nursemaid; John Hampton Hoge, Jr., standing in front of porch by the railing; James Otey Hoge, child on railing at right; unidentified girl and child on railing; Louise Kent Hoge, in front, standing by the fence; Liz Otey Hoge, standing behind Louise Kent Hoge; Elizabeth Kent Otey Black; Alexander Black.

Saturday, June 19 Sent cream today. Worked garden good. Had some raspberries. Harve & I put the millet in mountain field. I sold 2 year old colt (Bumblebee) to Bill Price<sup>103</sup> for \$150.00. I did not like to see her go.

Sunday, June 20 Julia & I drove up to church in Blbg. and heard Mr. Jackson. Took dinner & spent rest of day at Alex Black's. It is a beautiful day, clear & cool. Nelson Conrad & wife<sup>104</sup> in town yet.

to his livestock, so Julia Otey's desire to "secure a straw" suggests that the straw left after thrashing was regarded as something of a crop in its own right.

<sup>103.</sup> William Harvey Black "Bill" Price (1873–1960), the son of John Floyd Price and Carrie Shelor. Bill Price married first Rosa E. Price (1883–1915), in 1899, and second Ella Linkous, in 1908, and helped operate his father's farm, south of the present Sunnyside Holiness Church on Long Shop Road.

<sup>104.</sup> Kathryn (Hammett) Conrad.

**Monday, June 21** I had such a deep cold that I did not get up until after 11 AM. James B. Price came in to see me and paid pasture<sup>105</sup> on stock up to 20th. Mr. W. R. Cary called to me. Men nearly over corn the second time.

Tuesday, June 22 Dr. Black and Mary Lou, Ellen, Sarah, Elizabeth & Bessie Bell took dinner & spent the day with us. We enjoyed them so much. (Two were Sam Bell's daughters, one Frank's, and one Jim Bell's. 106) It has been a beautiful day.

Wednesday, June 23 Over corn third time. Put binder in wheat field, cut some wheat with cradle. Ot some cherries for Julia's Tea. Tried everywhere to get some snaps, Tomatoes, & strawberries. Rained a little tonight.

Thursday, June 24 Dr. P. B. Barringer<sup>109</sup> and his household of 12 came and spent the day with us. Alex, Liz, Mamie, Mary & Kent Patterson, and Louise Black.<sup>110</sup> Also Louise & Lizzie Hoge,<sup>111</sup> Robert Patterson, Jane & Zelle Minor took Tea & drove home by moonlight. Belle mare had a mare colt, Mary Jane. [I sold her to N. C. Morgan of Pulaski Co., Va., Feb 26, 1913.]<sup>112</sup>

- 105. A number of people in the neighborhood periodically rented pasture land from Otey, typically by the month.
- 106. Sarah James Bell (1894–1976) and Elizabeth "Bessie" Bell (1895–1970) were Samuel Hays Bell's daughters, Elizabeth Kent Bell (1893–1968) James Randal Kent Bell's daughter, and Ellen Howe Bell (1893–1969) Francis Bell's daughter. Sarah James Bell married Col. Robert E. Wysor (1892–1959), a 1915 graduate of V.M.I.; Elizabeth Bell married John Baxter Ricketts (d. 1980), an attorney from Greenville, South Carolina; Elizabeth Kent Bell married James Randall Crockett (1894–1969); and Ellen Howe Bell married Orrin Rankin Magill (1887–1972).
- 107. A binder was a machine that both reaped and bound wheat and other hays and grains. A cradle scythe consisted of a frame fastened to a scythe that enabled grain to be laid evenly as it was cut. Otey and his farmhands used both binders and cradle scythes to cut wheat, hay, oats, rye, etc.
- 108. Snap beans, any of various green or wax beans.
- 109. Paul Brandon Barringer (1857–1941) was the president of V.P.I. from 1907 until 1913. Dr. Barringer had medical degrees from the University of Virginia and New York University and law degrees from Davidson College and the University of South Carolina. Before coming to V.P.I., he had been chairman of the faculty at the University of Virginia and president of the Medical Society of Virginia.
- 110 Mary Louise Black (1890–1918), the Alexander Blacks' adopted daughter. In 1916 she married J. Horace Luster (b. 1891), the son of James O. and Bettie Luster.
- 111. Liz Otey Hoge.
- 112. Obviously Otey added this last sentence, which I place in square brackets, long after June 24, 1909.

Friday, June 25 Cut wheat yesterday & today. Beautiful wheat in mountain field next to Seymour Price. Jeff Wolf, Harve & Hub Snider, and others in field. I was on the binder all day.

Saturday, June 26 We got the binder over to field on top of hill next to woods, but the rye & wheat were too green to cut. Men plowed corn in new ground. Jeff cut window in separator house. Mrs. Price the cook went to Newport.

**Sunday, June 27** My birthday and a beautiful day. Nannie Wolf asked us over to breakfast as our cook was away. Had a good breakfast. We did not go to Church as it was so hot. Had nice raspberries today.

Monday, June 28 Cut wheat until 6 PM when rain stopped us. We milked the cows well. Sold lambs to Grant Flanagan — 6 ¼, first to 10<sup>th</sup> June; 5 ½, July.<sup>113</sup>

Tuesday, June 29 Cut wheat until 4 PM rain stopped us. We broke reel on binder too. Cows did better this evening.

Wednesday, June 30 Julia's birthday. I caught her a young rabbit in wheat field. I finished cutting wheat today. It rained about 3 PM but we cut some wheat afterwards. Also cut Rye. Creamery check for this month \$130.00.

Thursday, July 1 Julia took Nannie Wolf to town in the buggy with her so Nannie could see the doctor. I took a good bath and shaved. Salted Stock and looked over farm. Rode to Forks. Called on Jim Evans, got some cherries.

*Friday, July 2* The men are hauling rails for wheat stacks. <sup>114</sup> I worked the garden. Sold K. B. Long a jersey calf for \$5.00, sowed more millet, and had my wagon fixed by Rad Fisher. Had wagon ladders <sup>115</sup> fixed. Made hay ladders. <sup>116</sup> Mr. Wolf helped Julia a little in the garden.

Saturday, July 3 Julia & I drove to Blacksburg and took the train for Christiansburg. The corner stone to new court house was laid. Judge

<sup>113.</sup> Grant Flanagan, from the Flanagan farm on the New River, agreed to pay Otey 6 1/4c/lb. for the lambs he had gotten in early June and 5 1/2c/lb. for those he was to get in July.

<sup>114.</sup> Fence rails were used to make a foundation under stacks and ricks to level them and keep them off the ground. Wheat, hay, and other grasses and grains are more likely to mildew or rot if allowed to come into direct contact with the earth.

<sup>115.</sup> A wagon ladder was a device used in a wagon bed to confine or cradle bundles of hay or wheat for hauling.

<sup>116.</sup> A hay ladder was a ladder used to climb near the top of a haystack either to put more hay on the stack, when the stack was built, or to take hay off the stack, when it was fed to livestock.

Duke spoke.<sup>117</sup> We had a very pleasant day, saw many friends, & came home in the trap that I had painted new. The jail Bird played beautifully for us at Mrs. Tallant's.

Sunday, July 4 Julia did not drive to church with me so Roy Wolf drove me in my double buggy. I took dinner at Alex's. Harve Hall & wife and Mr. Davenport of Roanoke were there too. I came home at 3 PM. Jim Hoge came back with me. Julia was asleep.

Monday, July 5 I cut down a lot of hay and a stack of wheat is nearly up. It is raining tonight. Had only 125 lbs. of cream this AM. Belle's colt is not well. Mr. Cary was here today. A bee stung Jim Hoge & he has a swollen foot.

Tuesday, July 6 Hard rain. Wheat & hay catching it good fashion. Too wet to send to Christiansburg after refrigerator<sup>118</sup> and other things. I washed Belle's colt up and put some powder boric acid & [ ] talcum on the sore. It has rained steadily all day. Stopped about 6 PM. [Jim Hoge let all of the cows out but one.]<sup>119</sup>

Wednesday, July 7 Sent cream to V.P.I and got binder in. Too wet for work on farm. Oiled harness. Got long letter from cousin Laura Pleasants Moore<sup>120</sup> and answered it at once. Julia had a good supper. Cook has gone to Newport.

Thursday, July 8 I sent Roy Wolf to Christiansburg after the refrig-

<sup>117.</sup> The Montgomery County Courthouse dedicated in 1909 remained in use until 1976, when it was razed to make way for the present courthouse on the same spot.

Judge R. T. W. Duke of Charlottesville was a prominent leader in Albemarle County. In 1887 and 1888, he was a prime mover in an attempt to have the Virginia Agricultural Experiment Station moved from Blacksburg to Charlottesville. However, when the state legislature established the station permanently in Blacksburg, under the control of the V.P.I. Board of Visitors, Duke appealed to all Virginians to support that decision.

<sup>118.</sup> An early refrigerator was essentially just a box or cabinet with a compartment designed to hold a block of ice.

<sup>119.</sup> This sentence, which I place in square brackets, is in a child's hand, probably Jim Hoge's. It appears at the end of Otey's July 6 entry.

<sup>120.</sup> The wife of Dr. E. Overton Moore, Laura Kathleen (Pleasants) Moore (b. 1876) was the daughter of James J. Pleasants, Jr. (b. 1831) and Laura Kathleen Robinson (b. 1841) and the younger sister of Otey's first wife Carolee Otey Pleasants. (James J. Pleasants, Jr. was the son of James J. Pleasants and Emily Julia Bibb, who was the daughter of Thomas and Pamela Bibb. Thomas Bibb became Governor of Alabama in 1820, succeeding his brother William Wyatt Bibb, Alabama's first governor.). The Overton Moores lived in Memphis, Tennessee.

erator. He got home about 6 PM. Shocked some hay<sup>121</sup> late this afternoon. Julia & Nannie drove to see Mrs. Pascoe<sup>122</sup> for raspberries. Cows did not do so well this evening.

*Friday, July* 9 Sent off 18 more lambs which weighed 68 lbs. @ 5c. We took the wet wheat off of stack and stacked it over and got the hay in front field up in shocks. Weather very threatening. Got a card from Jim Cowan saying he had Quinsy.

Saturday, July 10 Stacked wheat, salted, & looked over farm, then drove to Blacksburg & brought Ben Hart<sup>123</sup> home with me. Julia & cook had a good Supper and Ben seemed to enjoy his visit. Aunt Margie is at the Yellow Sulphur.

Sunday, July 11 Ben & myself drove down to see Jim Cowan. He was better. Ben took train to Belspring at 2:40 PM. I stayed with Jim, Maud & children until 7 PM. Mr. & Mrs. Nelson came to see Julia. I got home at 8:15 PM.

Monday, July 12 Bright & clear. Hope to stack much wheat. We got up two stacks of wheat & one of hay. The weather fine for the work. I drove Belle's colt. She hurt one of Julia's turkeys. I helped milk.

Tuesday, July 13 Men came to stack wheat but it rained more & we had to come in. Pulled weeds in garden. Bonnie took Cary's horse. Cows did a little better this evening. Too wet to get up my 2nd stack of hay.

Wednesday, July 14 Finished stacking wheat. Julia & I drove to Otley and took tea with Mamie Patterson & family. Called at Lizzie's & deposited \$350.00 in bank. A party of 30 wanted us to go to Mountain Lake with them but we could not go.

Thursday, July 15 Mowing more hay, putting up one stack, and got a lot in shocks. Robert Patterson, Dan & Jim Hoge are having a good time fishing, bathing & gathering berries.

<sup>121.</sup> Like wheat, oats, rye, and other grains and grasses, hay, when cut, was tied in small bundles, sometimes by hand and sometimes by a binder, a number of which (roughly, ten or twelve) were then bound together and stood on end to form a shock. Shocks were left in the field for some time to dry, then hauled to a stack yard, or other central location, to be stacked or ricked.

<sup>122.</sup> Martha Jane (Whittaker) Pascoe (1842–1932), the wife of Thomas Pascoe (1825–1901), who was born and reared in England. The Thomas Pascoe homeplace was located on what is now Old Mill Road, southeast of Walnut Spring.

<sup>123.</sup> The son of William T. Hart and Lucy Gaines Bentley and the grandson of Dr. and Mrs. Henry Moss Bentley, Henry Bentley "Ben" Hart (b. 1868) was Otey's first cousin once removed. In 1902 he married Mary Frazier.

Friday, July 16 We got up another hay stack before the rain ran us in. Fixed up binder & took it to the oat field. Did a lot of indoor jobs as hay was too wet. Robert caught a terrapin.

Saturday, July 17 Cut oats with binder all day. Got up a hay stack & a lot in shocks. Had 7 men at work all day. Cows did better, and if I could only get the flies stopped, they would do fine.

Sunday, July 18 Julia did not go to church with me. Jim Hoge stayed here with her. Mr. Jackson preached a good Sermon. I took dinner at Alex's and saw Lou & family.

Monday, July 19 We cut oats, put up a hay stack, and got ready to Thrash tomorrow. I rode to Forks, saw David Cloyd, Jr., Dr. Spencer & others. It has been a beautiful day, cool & clean. Put bull in his lot, as he got in corn.

Tuesday, July 20 Mr. Zach Price thrashed one stack and made 220 bushels of wheat, 30 bushels of Rye. A nice day for the work and I had more men than I needed. Jack Long bought my old white cow at \$26.00.

Wednesday, July 21 I mowed hay all day myself. Planted buckwheat. Had a lot of oats cut and shocked a lot of hay. Julia called on Mrs. Taylor<sup>124</sup> at Dr. McBryde's.

Thursday, July 22 Julia called on Mrs. David Cloyd. 125 I mowed more hay. Got up one more stack, making 7. It rained in afternoon. Finished cutting oats. Trilby cow was served yesterday. Jim Otey Hoge brought up cows and did many other things on the farm for us.

Friday, July 23 Rained, too wet to work. I sent 6 bushels of Rye to Kanode's Mill, salted stock, & looked over farm. Put up some hay in stack late in afternoon. Big Brown cow had a calf. I helped milk as we were so late getting at it.

Saturday, July 24 Bright & cool. Men working in hay. Amps Rollins<sup>126</sup> died yesterday. I went to Price's Fork and got a Receipt for wheat put in the mill. Rode to Mr. W. N. Cary's to look at a cow; did not buy her.

<sup>124.</sup> A native of Richmond, Lucy Taylor (Mrs. Henry) was frequently a guest of the John M. McBrydes. She was the mother of Franklin Minor Taylor ('15), who played left end on the V.P.I. football team and was class sergeant-at-arms. The Taylors were related to the Benjamin Blake Minors.

<sup>125.</sup> Possibly Mary Buford (Langhorne) Cloyd (Mrs. David M., Sr.), but more likely Manie (Guthrie) Cloyd (Mrs. David M., Jr.).

<sup>126.</sup> Amps Rollins lived on Brush Mountain, north of present Meadowbrook Drive, in the hollow above the old George Wall graveyard. He was related to Calvin Rollins, who owned property bordering the Cowan estate.



Hoges, Oteys, Blacks, and others at Walnut Spring, probably July 4, 1911. Beginning on the bottom step and going up: John Hampton Hoge, Jr. (12), young man at bottom right standing on first step; unidentified young man (13) behind Hampton Hoge; Alice Dunbar Hoge (4), girl at bottom left; James Otey Hoge (9), boy in center, sitting; Liz Otey Hoge (10); James Otey Goodwin (11); Louisa Virginia Otey Hoge (5); Louise Kent Hoge (6), young woman holding box; Daniel Howe Hoge (1), young man at top left; Julia Magruder Tyler Otey (7), woman in front of column at far right; James Armistead Otey (8); Elizabeth Kent Otey Black (2); Alexander Black (3).

Sunday, July 25 Beautiful day. We drove to church, heard Rev. Nelson. Took dinner with Dr. Black & Mary Lou. Frank Bell & three daughters and Aunt Margie were there. Louise & Alice came home with us. We got home at 7:30 PM.

Monday, July 26 Thrashed wheat & oats out of mountain field at Sheep shed – 152 bushels of wheat, oats 112. Mr. Word<sup>127</sup> of Christiansburg

<sup>127.</sup> Harry McClanahan Word (1865–1942) owned a large farm about four and a half miles east of Christiansburg, on the south side of state Route 8. Word also operated a feed and seed store in Christiansburg and was chairman of the Montgomery County Democratic Party for a number of years. His granddaughter Mary Ann (Word) Hinshelwood presently lives in Christiansburg.

came to buy cows. Would not pay enough. Wants to buy sheep later.

Tuesday, July 27 We got a lot of hay cut and one more stack up, making 9. Julia, Louise, Alice & I drove to Blacksburg calling & on business. Pretty day and we enjoyed it. Poor Kiz Long<sup>128</sup> died at 2 PM.

Wednesday, July 28 Planted Turnips and got a lamb on ice. Men working in the hay. Kiz Long was buried in a \$40 coffin today. Rose Stockard<sup>129</sup> called. So did R. M. Patterson, Robert Patterson, Jr. & Dan Hoge. It is raining a good rain tonight.

Thursday, July 29 Mr. & Mrs. Dunlap, Mrs. Henry & daughter Dicy, 130 Mary Lou Black, Sarah & Mary Lou Bell, 131 Mrs. David Cloyd, Jr., Mrs. Ligon & son Leslie, Louise & Liz Hoge, Jim & Alice Hoge all spent day with us. We all enjoyed the day.

<sup>128.</sup> Kizrah "Kiz" Long (1852–1909) was the daughter of James Long, Sr. and his second wife Nancy Sarver. She never married and lived her entire life at her parents' home on present Brooksfield Road.

<sup>129.</sup> The daughter of Ella Hyde Fowlkes (1859–1934) and Dr. Richard Rupert Stockard (1849–1934), Rosilie Otey "Rose" Stockard (1889–1978) married Thomas Barksdale Hutcheson, Sr. (1882–1950), a member of the V.P.I. class of 1906 and later a professor of agronomy, head of the Department of Agronomy, and dean of agriculture there. Thomas Barksdale Hutcheson, Jr. (1926–1985), their son, also taught in the Department of Agronomy and served as department head. John Redd "Jack" Hutcheson (1886–1962), V.P.I. class of 1907 and the brother of Thomas B. Hutcheson, Sr., was president of V.P.I. from 1945 until 1947, and later president of the Virginia Tech Educational Foundation. Like her parents and brother Dr. Charles Rupert Stockard (1879–1939), Rose Stockard periodically came to Blacksburg to visit her sister May (Stockard) Wilson, the wife of Francis Daniel Wilson, a professor of chemistry at V.P.I. since 1904. The Stockards were related to the Oteys and often visited both the Oteys and the Blacks.

<sup>130.</sup> Wirt Dunlap (1859–1933) was an attorney who was twice Blacksburg mayor, from 1896 until 1899, and from 1902 until 1904. His wife, Ida (Brittain) Dunlap (1867–1960), played the piano and gave piano lessons to generations of Blacksburg children.

Mrs. Henry was Ida Dunlap's sister. Her daughter Dicy Henry (1897–1990), later the wife of James Henry Boyd Fogleman (1881–1964), became an accomplished violinist and was a mainstay of Blacksburg society for more than half a century. J.H.B. Fogleman worked at the Agricultural Experiment Station and was a renowned tenor; he sang in the college glee club and performed in numerous musical productions in Blacksburg and at V.P.I.

<sup>131.</sup> Either Sam Bell's daughters Sarah James Bell and Mary Lou Bell (1898–1954), or Frank Bell's daughters Sarah Kent Bell and Mary Lou Bell (1896–1981). Or, conceivably, Sam Bell's Sarah and Frank's Mary Lou or Sam Bell's Mary Lou and Frank's Sarah. Frank Bell's Mary Lou married John Augustus Blakemore (1894–1986); Sam Bell's Mary Lou never married.

Friday, July 30 Rained last night. Mary Lou Bell & I drove to Vicker to meet Mr. and Mrs. J. H. Tyler, Jr., & Mrs. Frank McConnell.<sup>132</sup> We had a pleasant drive home and we have enjoyed having them so much.

Saturday, July 31 Bright, warm & I am pushing hay for all I can. Mary Lou Bell is going home today. Alice drove up to Town with her. Jim Tyler, Belle McConnell & I drove to Blacksburg. Called at Dr. Black's and I drove them all over V.P.I. grounds.

Sunday, August 1 Belle McConnell & I drove in to the Baptist Church. Mr. Jackson preached a good sermon. We stopped at Alex Black's awhile. Called at Dr. McBryde's. Alice & Jim Hoge came home with us.

Monday, August 2 I took J. H. Tyler, Jr. & wife & Belle to Vicker for N&W Railroad. They took Train for Radford. Had some grass cut this afternoon. It rained all last night and until noon today, cool east rain.

Tuesday, August 3 Rained. Russet, my riding mare, sprained her hind leg. James B. Price bought cow (Sarah) & Belle's 133 bull calf at \$55.00. He wants sheep and a hog. Started plowing for wheat. The creamery check for June 20 to July 20 was \$167.88.

Wednesday, August 4 I drove up in the milk wagon with Roy Wolf to take the Train for Salem. Mr. C. L. Miller drove me all over the Town in his buggy; looked at all of his cows. I bought 9 cows, took dinner at Hotel, and spent the night with Mr. Miller.

Thursday, August 5 After getting Mr. Miller started with the cows, I took the street car for Roanoke. Did lots of shopping and called on Mrs. Battle. <sup>134</sup> Took Train for Blacksburg. Mrs. William Newton & daughter came on to Blacksburg. I took supper at Alex's and rode Dandy his horse home. Got here at 9:30 PM. Storm scared me.

<sup>132.</sup> James Hoge Tyler, Jr. (1871–1937), his wife Evelyn Gray (Bell) Tyler, whom he married in 1908, and his sister Belle Norwood (Tyler) McConnell (1876–1955), the wife of Col. Frank Percy McConnell (1870–1941), whom she also married in 1908. The McConnells lived in Richmond at 2219 Monument Avenue.

<sup>133.</sup> Otey had both a mare and a cow named "Belle."

<sup>134.</sup> Josephine John Anna (Somerville) Battle (1851–1915), who lived in Rocky Mount, North Carolina, was the widow of James Smith Battle (1846–1894) and the mother of Maud Cowan and William Smith Battle (1870–1947), whom she periodically visited in Roanoke. William Smith Battle, who never married, was vice-president of the Norfolk and Western Railway Company. He lived in Roanoke and owned a farm in Vinton.

<sup>135.</sup> Mandy and Ann Newton were the wife and daughter of William L. Newton (d. 1914), a native of Norfolk, who graduated from V.A.M.C. in 1876. The Newtons were old friends of both the Oteys and the Blacks.

Friday, August 6 Up early, got up 40 old sheep & took them to meet Miller in Blacksburg with cows. He did not get there until 4 PM. I brought them on home. He took one of the 10 cows back. I was tired when I got home.

Saturday, August 7 I took Alice Hoge home in milk buggy. Got one cow and calf. I had to leave & come home. Dan Hoge & Robert Patterson went home. Jim Cowan came about 3 PM and on home about 6 PM.

Sunday, August 8 We did not go to church. Spent a quiet happy day here at home. Hampton Hoge & Robert Patterson came down on wheels<sup>136</sup> and spent the afternoon. We walked up to see Kouch.<sup>137</sup>

Monday, August 9 We dug potatoes. The men put hay in upper meadow and I looked over farm and salted stock.

*Tuesday, August 10* Have finished digging potatoes and then we all went to help with hay. Finished that. Got everything in shape to start on our trip to Washington, Va. to visit the J. J. Millers. <sup>138</sup>

Wednesday, August 11 Went to Mr. J. J. Miller's, near Little Washington, Va. Up early and off for Train in Blacksburg at 9:15 AM. Dr. Black & Mary Lou told us goodbye at the train. Got to Front Royal at 7 PM. Had pleasant trip.

Thursday, August 12 Had good night's rest at Weaver's home. Afton Inn full. Will Keyser & Callie<sup>139</sup> came to see us and we went to a horse show. Col. & Mrs. William Stewart<sup>140</sup> were there. Mr. J. J. Miller & wife came and took me home with them that night at 9:30 PM.

<sup>136.</sup> Bicycles.

<sup>137.</sup> Louise Talitha Scott, who married Samuel Enos Snider and was the mother of Harvey Jackson "Harve" Snider, Ira Hubbard "Hub" Snider, Robert James Snider, George D. Snider, and John William Snyder (his preferred spelling), all of whom worked for Otey, as well as Berdie May (Snider) Fisher (1885–1968), who married John Adam Fisher (1878–1939) and worked for the Hoges at Walnut Spring in later years. Reputed to be a loquacious and colorful character, "Kouch" Snider, later "Granny Kouch," lived with her family on Brush Mountain, near Otey's coal mines.

<sup>138.</sup> John J. Miller and Evelyn "Evie" (Tyler) Miller owned a farm near Washington, Virginia. Evie Miller was Julia Otey's sister.

<sup>139.</sup> William L. "Willie" Keyser (1864–1915) and Caroline Hampton "Callie" (DeJamette) Keyser (1864–1959), who lived near the John J. Millers and had four children, Edward Hampton (1893–1956), Joseph DeJarnette (b. 1894), Elliott (1896–1907), and Henry Magruder (b. 1901). Julia Otey was related to Callie Keyser through the Magruders, and her father's first wife was Jane Coleman DeJarnette (1820–1841), the daughter of Daniel and Hulda DeJamette of Spring Grove, the DeJarnette homeplace in Caroline County. (Jane [DeJarnette] Tyler's sister, Nicey Ann Hawes [DeJarnette] Hoge, was the mother of Otey's brother-in-law John Hamp-

*Friday, August 13* At Mr. John J. Miller's. The children have grown so much. Mrs. William Keyser called. We took the children fishing. Mr. & Mrs. Miller & I drove to church to hear Rev. Wharton. Big crowd in church, good preaching. Took Julia Magruder & Miss Eva<sup>141</sup> to dancing school.

Saturday, August 14 Went down early & spent morning at Mrs. William Keyser's. The children & I had a fine time. Ephrom the little colored boy is very funny & good at his work.

Sunday, August 15 We spent the morning quietly at home; poured down rain and we saw no company. Read of Dr. Kent Black's sudden death on Thursday & am so shocked.

Monday, August 16 Invited to Mrs. Keyser's. Julia has a headache & we didn't go. All went to see 24 people baptized in the river. Evelyn & Jim<sup>142</sup> went to hear Dr. Wharton lecture on Palestine & got a polecat on buggy wheels — Smell!!

Tuesday, August 17 Sallie Miller<sup>143</sup> came home — a beauty. Mr. & Mrs. John Miller rode to salt cattle. Callers: Mrs. Anna Keyser<sup>144</sup> & John. Miss Eva & Julia Magruder went to dancing school.

Wednesday, August 18 All the William Keysers to spend the day. Mrs. Stewart stayed. Belle Shorter & Mrs. Slaughter called in afternoon. Jim got scared at a "mad dog."

Thursday, August 19 Col. & Mr. Miller & Jim rode on top of mountain — very dry — Mrs. Dudley & [ ] called. Col. tired but rallied quickly & all enjoyed the day.

Friday, August 20 Miss Evelyn & Julia went to dancing school & it

ton Hoge and the wife of Daniel Howe Hoge, the brother of Tyler's second wife Eliza Hoge.)

- 140. Although originally from Albemarle County, Col. William Henry Stewart (d. 1912) and his wife Sarah (Magruder) Stewart, Julia's aunt, lived in Portsmouth. After Julia's mother and father died, she came to regard the Stewarts almost as substitute parents. They presided over her wedding at Trinity Episcopal Church in Portsmouth, and the wedding invitation bears their names as hosts. (Their son Dr. Robert Armistead Stewart was one of the groom's attendants.) Although she usually went by the nickname "Sadie," Mrs. Stewart was also called "Sallie." Col. Stewart served in the Virginia House of Delegates, where he was a strong proponent of increased public assistance for Confederate veterans.
- 141. Julia Magruder Miller and Evelyn "Eva" Miller, two of the John Millers' daughters.
- 142. James "Jim" Miller, the John Millers' son.
- 143. The John Millers' daughter Sarah. Like Sarah Stewart, Sarah Miller was called both "Sadie" and "Sallie."
- 144. Anna Keyser is probably Anne E. Keyser of Flint Hill, Virginia.

rained hard. Jim rode into Washington in morning. John Miller<sup>145</sup> came back home at night.

Saturday, August 21 We returned calls. Spent morning on big porch at Mt.[ ].

Sunday, August 22 Col. & Sadie returned to William Keyser's. Julia went over to Frank Jones' new house & saw Ida Wood. 146 In the evening she, Jim & Evelyn drove to Mrs. Keyser's.

Monday, August 23 Julia has headache so we spent the day at William Keyser's without her. Came home early & packed to return.

*Tuesday, August 24* I got up at 4 AM. We had breakfast and were in the carriage by 5, and Mr. Miller drove us to Front Royal, 22 miles, by 10 AM. Took train for home. Arrived in Blacksburg at 7 PM and spent the night at Mary Lou Black's.<sup>147</sup>

Wednesday, August 25 Frank Bell & I slept together last night. He went with Alex to Dr. Black's farm on Roanoke River. 148 Julia & I came home in milk wagon. Roy Wolf could not be found so left him to walk. Found all here.

Thursday, August 26 I looked over farm. Found stock doing very well, although it is very dry. Cows going down in milk some.

Friday, August 27 I had water pipes taken up and fixed and the water gap fixed between Wall's & myself to keep his hogs out of my corn. Julia & I drove into town after 7 PM. Rebecca Patterson<sup>149</sup> came home with us.

Saturday, August 28 Kent Patterson and Victor Barringer<sup>150</sup> came. Rebecca, Hampton Hoge & the other two boys & myself drove to Lovers' Leap<sup>151</sup> and David Cloyd, Jr.'s. Mary Patterson & John Davis<sup>152</sup> came, took tea. Drove back by moonlight.

Sunday, August 29 Rebecca, Kent, Victor & I drove in to church

- 145. John J. Miller, Jr. (d. 1918).
- 146. Frank and Ida (Wood) Jones were related to the DeJarnettes.
- 147. When Dr. Black died, the Kent Blacks were living in a large, two-story brick house they had built on the corner of present Clay Street and Draper Road. In 1910 Louisa Hoge bought that house and subsequently lived there with her children until 1920. Between 1915 and 1920, her second husband, John James Davis, also lived there.
- 148. Like Alex Black, Dr. Kent Black owned a farm on the north fork of the Roanoke River.
- 149. Rebecca Patterson (1892–1920) was the Robert Pattersons' younger daughter. In 1918 she married Joseph McGavock Crockett (b. 1884), the son of Samuel Rush Crockett and Nannie Ellen Cox. Related to the Oteys through the McGavocks, Sam Crockett owned a large farm in Giles County.
- 150. Victor Clay Barringer was the Paul Brandon Barringers' son and a member of the V.P.I. class of 1911.

& spent day. Dinner at Alex Black's. Julia had a headache. Jim Hoge came home with me. Hampton went back on his wheel about 6 PM. Julia is better this evening.

Monday, August 30 Jim Hoge went home in the milk wagon. Jeff Wolf, Harve Snider & I worked on water pipes & digging reservoir at the Spring near Mountain. Maj. J. T. Cowan, Mary, & Richard Adams came. Julia drove up to Blacksburg in the buggy today to tell old Mrs. Patterson (Mr. Robert Patterson's mother) goodby.

Tuesday, August 31 Major, Richard & I drove over to see Mr. John Kipps on business. After we got back Mary & they drove home. Julia & I enjoyed their visit. Digging at spring yet.

Wednesday, September 1 Roy Wolf left today for Marion. Julia's lost trunk came today. The apples had not mashed much in Trunk. I rode to coal bank to get some pipes.

Thursday, September 2 Got a telegram that Dr. E. W. Magruder<sup>153</sup> and Ann (Mr[s]. T. Allen) would be here on noon train. They came & we enjoyed them. Julia had such a good Supper.

Friday, September 3 Julia took the two men to Depot in Blacksburg. She drove up in the Trap and was back to dinner. It is very dry. Sprinkling rain tonight. Got concrete box in at Spring.

Saturday, September 4 Rained a little all night & good rain until 10 AM. I rode Russet to Blacksburg meeting. They voted for Dr. Ribble to represent the county. I spent the day in town and had dinner with Lou & children. Louise is better.

Sunday, September 5 Julia & I drove in to church. She attended her church & I mine. We came home from church and both rode horse-

<sup>151.</sup> Lovers' Leap is located off present McCoy Road and overlooks the New River. Like similarly named sites in other parts of the world, Lovers' Leap is supposedly the spot from which two star-crossed lovers (in this case, Native Americans of tribes hostile to each other) leaped to their deaths. It was at Lovers' Leap that Confederate soldiers summarily tried and executed George P. Price (b. 1842) for the murder of a Confederate spy named Craft. The murder occurred in what is now known as Craft Hollow, just west of Otey's mountain land.

<sup>152.</sup> Originally from Norfolk, John James Davis was a 1904 graduate of V.P.I., where he subsequently became a professor of modern languages, and Louisa Hoge's second husband.

<sup>153.</sup> Dr. Egbert W. Magruder, Julia Otey's uncle, was State Chemist for the Virginia Department of Agriculture and Immigration. He and his wife Byrd lived in Richmond in 1909, and later moved to Norfolk, where they resided at 721 Raleigh Street. Egbert Magruder was a groomsman in the Oteys' wedding.

back to call on Mr. & Mrs. Charlie McDonald & the Misses McDonald. 154 We enjoyed the ride and had a nice Supper together.

Monday, September 6 I fed hogs corn out of field, helped men with the Spring. Julia & I drove in to town after dinner. Took some corn to V.P.I. to sell. Called at Prof. Davidson's and brought Mrs. Dr. Spencer home with us. It is too cool to sit on porches.

**Tuesday, September 7** The first day of Radford Fair. We took Mrs. John Spencer back to Town, called on Capt. Dashiell<sup>155</sup> & family, and took supper at Alex Black's. Went to musical at Mr. & Mrs. Dunlap's. Came home at midnight.

Wednesday September 8 I rode Russet to Radford Fair. Had a pleasant day and spent the night at Gov. Tyler's. They had a house full of his children & daughters-in-law. Mr. Goldsborough Serpell<sup>156</sup> was there and I had many invitations to spend the night.

Thursday, September 9 Rained "to beat the Band." We spent the morning indoors. I rode over to Jim Cowan's about 3 PM. Hampton Hoge was there. Maud & the children are well.

Friday, September 10 Maud & Hampton drove to Radford. I rode down to see Aunt Margie & spent the day. Mr. Robert Patterson & Otey came too. Mr. Patterson, Otey & myself came away about 5 PM. I home. They to Blacksburg.

Saturday, September 11 Julia & I were busy all day. I salted stock & looked over farm. I wrote some letters and got a good mail.

Sunday, September 12 We spent the morning at home. I drove to hear Mr. Nelson preach at the old brick church<sup>157</sup> at 8 PM. Good many neighbors out to hear him. Put Adams came & spent night.

<sup>154.</sup> Ellen Taylor "Ella" McDonald (1855–1927) and Mary Edward McDonald (1872–1931), who lived at Green Hill, were the daughters of the Floyd Fechtig McDonalds and Charles Black McDonald's sisters. Neither ever married. A third daughter, Virginia McDonald (1863–1943), married Rufus H. Wilson in 1907.

<sup>155.</sup> Capt. William Robert Dashiell, of the 24th United States Infantry, replaced George Hairston Jamerson as V.P.I. commandant of cadets in September 1909. In July 1911, Dashiell was promoted to the grade of major and transferred to Fort Sheridan, Illinois. Joseph F. Ware succeeded him as commandant.

<sup>156.</sup> Goldsborough Serpell was the father of Nelle Louise Serpell (b. 1878), who in 1904 married Stockton Heth Tyler (1874–1943), the James Hoge Tylers' son.

<sup>157.</sup> The "old brick church" is St. Peter's Lutheran Church. First called Price's Church and then St. Michael's, St. Peter's originated around 1745 and is the oldest Lutheran church west of the Alleghenies and the third oldest in Virginia. St. Peter's "old brick church" building, located on Merrimac Road, about a quarter-mile south of



From left, Virginia McDonald (Mrs. Rufus H. Wilson), Ellen Taylor McDonald, Mary Edward McDonald (Photograph courtesy of Mr. and Mrs. James L. McDonald.)

Monday, September 13 Put went to Slusser sale. Mr. John McConkley & Mr. Charles Miller came to see cows. Mr. & Mrs. R. M.

where it intersects Price's Fork Road, was actually torn down in 1885. Subsequently many St. Peter's parishioners began attending St. Mark's Lutheran Church in Price's Fork, Shiloh Lutheran Church in Long Shop, and Luther Memorial Lutheran Church in Blacksburg. Nonetheless, St. Peter's continued to serve its remaining parishioners, conducting services in the schoolhouse that stood next to the site of the former church building, in the east corner of the church property — the right rear corner as one faces the property from Merrimac Road. (On week days that schoolhouse was occupied by a public elementary school, Matamoros School Number 9.)

For a number of years ministers of other denominations also used the school-house, conducting church services and Sunday school classes there at various times on Sunday and sometimes other days as well. Occasionally accompanied by Julia, Otey frequently attended Sunday school and church at the Matamoros school-house, most often on Sunday afternoons. (When he speaks of the "old brick church," he means the schoolhouse that had replaced the "old brick church" as a place of worship.) The remnant of the old St. Peter's congregation gradually migrated to New St. Peter's Lutheran Church in the Glade community, but Lutheran services were still sometimes held on the old property as late as 1920. The New St. Peter's and St. Mark's congregations built the present St. Michael's Lutheran Church building on the same site in 1971.

Patterson & sons took dinner and spent the day. Eddie Tyler is with us tonight. The men are plowing Field on North Hill. 158

Tuesday, September 14 Ed & I rode horseback to Dr. Black's sale. 159 Big crowd there & things went high. Put, Ed, & I came back together. Put went home; Ed is with us tonight. Frank & Jim Bell were at the sale.

Wednesday, September 15 Ed left for home. I fixed some fences, went to where men were plowing, cut briars and burned stumps. Julia is not so well. Raining tonight. We had such a good Supper.

Thursday, September 16 Raining all day. Julia put up lots of cans of fruit. I wrote letters, read, and helped milk this evening. W. R. Cary came to see me. I gave Alex Long a jersey calf. Harve Snider rode George to Town.

Friday, September 17 I rode to Vicker to Norfolk & Western and took the train to Radford. Saw Fred Whaling's 160 sheep. Put Adams & I in buggy. Took train at 8 PM. Frank Bell was on the train and we had a talk. Julia drove to Blacksburg and fixed church robes at Prof. Davidson's.

Saturday, September 18 Too wet to plow. Men got potatoes in bags out of crib. Julia & I rode horseback to mill & and on to call on Mrs. Charles McDonald. We enjoyed the ride as the [ ] looking so pretty.

Sunday, September 19 We got up early and took the Virginian train at Price<sup>161</sup> & on to Princeton, West Va. We found Rashe DeJarnette, Wirt [ ], Mr. Lewis Taylor, and Frank Wall there. We had a pleasant day and got home by 6:30 PM.

<sup>158.</sup> North Hill is the hill directly south of the Otey homeplace, just beyond Tom's Creek. The hill "faces" north toward Brush Mountain.

<sup>159.</sup> The sale of part of Dr. Kent Black's estate.

<sup>160.</sup> Fred Whaling was undoubtedly a relative, perhaps a brother of Mary Lewis Whaling (b. 1877), the daughter of John T. Whaling and Mary Ingraham, who married John Buford (b. 1871), the Ike Bufords' son, in 1898.

<sup>161.</sup> Price Station was a small depot just on the Price's Fork side of present Price Tunnel. There were two tracks at Price, one used by the Norfolk and Western Railway and the other by the Virginian Railway. Completed in 1907, the Virginian Railroad ran through the New River Valley, north of the Norfolk and Western line, and connected the coal mines at Merrimac and McCoy with the port at Norfolk.

<sup>162.</sup> Rashe DeJarnette was Julia Otey's cousin. Her grandmother Lucinda Coleman, who married Henry Tyler, was the sister of Rashe DeJarnette's grandmother Huldah Coleman, who was Nicey Ann Hawes (DeJarnette) Hoge's mother.

The Alexander Floyd Walls' eldest son, William Franklin "Frank" Wall (1862–1946) and his wife LaDonna (Kipps) Wall owned a farm off Glade Road, near what is now Linwood Lane. Like his brother Guy Floyd Wall, Frank Wall was both a civil engineer and a farmer.

Monday, September 20 Men plowing and finished the field on top of North Hill. Had some corn cut. The cows are only doing tolerably well in milk.

Tuesday, September 21 I took James B. Price with me after some sheep Fred Whaling had. The sheep did not suit me so I did not buy them. They were on the other side of Pepper's Ferry. I got home at 6 PM.

Wednesday, September 22 Men harrowing for wheat. I cut in the corn field with three other hands until Dr. Charlie Stockard<sup>163</sup> & Alice Hoge came. I came to the house with them. Nannie Wolf gave us a large fish.

Thursday, September 23 I sent a load of wheat to Price's Fork Mill to be cleaned to sow, 164 then rode to Bob Price's (up the creek) and bought 22 sheep. I took dinner with him. It rained so men stopped cutting corn & put some fence around hay stacks in the front field. Raining tonight.

Friday, September 24 Some men are Harrowing wheat land, others cutting corn. I had hogs fed corn out of field for the first time today. Belle's (horse) head is worse. Jim B. Price came to see about buying some sheep. Cool & clear tonight.

Saturday, September 25 Harve Snider took his wife Ressie to a Show at Christiansburg. Julia & I drove down to spend day with Aunt Margie & Mary Cowan. Stayed at Jim Cowan's and saw Maud & children. Maud entertained a party of Ladies. We got home about 7 PM.

Sunday, September 26 Julia & I drove to church in Blacksburg. She took dinner with Mary Lou Black, I with Lulu Hoge. We drove to hear Mr. Nelson preach at the old brick church (at Matamoros)<sup>165</sup> at 8 PM. About 50 people out to hear him.

<sup>163.</sup> The Richard Rupert Stockards' son, Dr. Charles Rupert Stockard was on the faculty of the medical school at Cornell University; he had a laboratory at Woods Hole, Massachusetts, and was widely recognized for pioneering work in the treatment of cancer.

<sup>164.</sup> Otey sent his seed wheat to the mill to be run through a seed-cleaning machine that removed chaff and other impurities to improve the quality of the wheat and make it better for sowing.

<sup>165. &</sup>quot;Matamoros" is the name John Michael Kipps (b. 1825), John Taylor Kipps's father, gave the neighborhood around St. Peter's Lutheran Church, including his own farm, on Merrimac Road. Along with Benjamin Linkous, who later became a colonel in the Confederate army, Cal Linkous, and Crockett Linkous, Kipps enlisted in a company of volunteers from the Blacksburg area and served during the Mexican War, 1846–1848; he stopped off for a time at the border town of Matamoros, just across the Rio Grande from Brownsville, Texas, and brought the name home with him when he returned.

Monday, September 27 I started drilling wheat. Men cut corn. After dinner I took Will Snyder<sup>166</sup> and brought my sheep home from R. H. Price's — 21 Ewes, 1 Buck. Julia busy getting ready for company tomorrow. She has about 30 little chickens just out.

Tuesday, September 28 My Buck killed the one I got from Bob Price yesterday. Drilling wheat (Harve & Wolf). The other men are cutting corn. Maud Cowan & children, Miss Winn, Rev. Nelson & wife took dinner. Mrs. Preston Means & Mrs. Mary Means<sup>167</sup> called. Maud & family spent the night. We have enjoyed them so much.

Wednesday, September 29 Maud, Miss Winn & children here. Julia & I expect to dine with the Misses McDonald today. We did. Also Rev. Hamil, 168 his wife, & two other ladies. We had a pleasant day. Cutting corn as fast as we can. Frost tonight.

*Thursday, September* 30 Harve Snider & I drilled wheat all day and finished field on top of North Hill. John Price cut Julia's corn in Garden. Wolf, Leonard Price, <sup>169</sup> & Calvin Kyle cut my corn. The cows are doing very well. Is a beautiful day; rather dry but the work is going on nicely.

Friday, October 1 I got my sheep out of George Wall's field. Lizzie & Louise Black, Mamie Patterson, & Louise Hoge called. Mrs. Dr. Francis D. Wilson, William Lybrook, Mrs. Tutwiler, <sup>170</sup> & Dr. Stockard called. The men are cutting corn & sowing wheat.

<sup>166.</sup> The John William Snyders' son, William Ernest "Will" or "Willie" Snyder (1897–1966) married Carolee Price (1896–1994), the Ballard Staples Prices' daughter. He operated a general store on Tom's Creek, and later one in the Sunnyside area, and worked in the Brush Mountain coal mines.

<sup>167.</sup> The Means were related to both the Oteys and the Prestons of Smithfield. Although originally from Blacksburg, by 1900 various members of the Means family, including Robert Preston Means, Virginia Preston Means, Sallie Palmer Means, and John H. Means, were living in Birmingham, Alabama. John H. Means later moved to Wisconsin.

<sup>168.</sup> Dr. H. P. Hamil preached at several local churches and was also a V.P.I. chaplain.
169. The Ballard Staples Prices' son, Leonard Law Price (1893–1966) married Bethel Irene Hutchinson (1908–1986), the daughter of Dallas Trace Hutchinson and Elsie A. Ratcliff, and worked as a farmhand at Walnut Spring and elsewhere in the Tom's Creek community.

<sup>170.</sup> Originally from near Lewisburg, West Virginia, J. B. and Meta Tutwiler arrived in Blacksburg shortly after 1905, and over the years operated hotels at three locations. The Tutwilers' first hotel was on the corner of Jackson and Main Streets, where the First Union Bank office now stands, at a site previously occupied by at least three other hotels. (In the mid-nineteenth century a Mr. Pugh operated an inn and tavern there in a building later enlarged by George Keister, who had a hotel and board-

Saturday, October 2 I cut corn until dinner myself. We finished cutting corn. I picked some apples and helped milk as the cook had gone on a visit to Newport. Julia & I are too tired to drive to Football game at V.P.I.<sup>171</sup>

Sunday, October 3 Belle cow went to Bull. Julia & I drove to church at Blacksburg. Jim Cowan & family were at church. We took dinner with Mr. & Mrs. William Lybrook. Had a pleasant day and enjoyed seeing their new house. We called at Lulu Hoge's & got home after 6 PM.

Monday, October 4 Drilling wheat in graveyard field. Disk harrow running too. Picked more apples this afternoon. Julia was in bed all day with a bad headache but is better tonight. Not as cool as it was.

Tuesday, October 5 We got millet & buckwheat in Barn and swept walls and ceilings of cow barn. Julia not well, in bed all day. I sold Tom Graham<sup>172</sup> 16 bu. of wheat at \$1.15. Drilling wheat in afternoon.

Wednesday, October 6 I had some corn shucked for hogs, drilled wheat, hilled up the celery, put up a stove in the dining room, & rode over to Linkous' Store & settled bill. Helped milk after I got back. Warm & clear this afternoon.

Thursday, October 7 I drove to Blacksburg, settled up all my bills, and bought another Ton of Fertilizer at B.P. & S. Co., <sup>173</sup> also another ton of Timothy seed. I took dinner with Alex Black and brought oysters & beef home with me.

Friday, October 8 I picked apples. Salted stock. Julia & I shucked a

ing house in the same building when V.A.M.C. opened in 1872. John Lewis Eakin operated Eakin's Hotel there at the turn of the century.) Later the Tutwilers ran a hotel on the site of the old nineteenth-century Amiss Hotel, at the corner of Main and Washington Streets, across from the present Blacksburg Municipal Building. After that hotel burned to the ground in 1927, they opened a hotel/boarding house on Main Street, in the building now occupied by Reynolds Architects, Inc., which remained open until the late 1960s.

<sup>171.</sup> Under new coach and athletic director Branch B. Bocock, V.P.I. opened the 1909 football season at home with a 6-0 victory over Clemson College (now University). The "Gobblers" (the nickname first appeared in print in 1909) won six games that year and suffered only one defeat, to Princeton University by a score of 8-6.

<sup>172.</sup> Probably David Thomas Graham (1863–1948), the son of Bryant Graham and Nancy Elkins, who married Perlina Frances Caldwell (1872–1931).

<sup>173.</sup> Earlier the Blacksburg Milling and Supply Company, the Blacksburg Power and Supply Company was a "power" and ice plant, as well as a mill and feed and seed store. In addition to feed, seed, fertilizer, and other farm supplies and implements, the store carried ice, as well as batteries and rudimentary generators or generating systems.

shock of her new corn<sup>174</sup> in garden. I rode to Price's Fork and chatted with neighbors. Julia packed butter for Winter. The black jersey had a heifer calf today.

Saturday, October 9 Planted onions & flowers in the garden. Julia drove up to town to "Church Market." Miss Ella & Miss Mary McDonald called. J.B. Price bought two cows of me. Bright, warm, & very dry.

Sunday, October 10 We did not drive up to Blacksburg to church but attended Service at Matamoros, 3 PM. The school house was full. The collection \$2.27. We called at Jim Evans' on the way home. It was a beautiful day. Warm & clear, very dry.

Monday, October 11 Raining. Cows were hard to find but we got them milked. Jack Long took cream to town. I sold Poky & Vick (cows) to J. B. Price. Only got \$48.20 for the two. It rained hard until about 1 PM. Jeff Wolf stopped work today.

Tuesday, October 12 Harve & I put potatoes in cellar today, fixed water pipes at spring, and fixed stalls in cow stable. Leonard Price got his arm broken twice and leg also. I rode down & helped Dr. Linkous<sup>175</sup> fix him up. Dr. Holly<sup>176</sup> commenced doctoring on Belle horse.

Wednesday, October 13 We got the milking done in good time. Harve shucked corn for hogs. Then fixed some boxes in cow shed. Julia & I walked down to see Leonard Price. James B. Price brought my sow shoat to me. I let him have two shoats.

Thursday, October 14 We marked 8 Bull calves and sowed grass seed on wheat land where we did not drill. Mrs. Jas Lee Wall & Miss Hattie Wall<sup>177</sup> spent the day. I took Leonard a basket of dinner. He is feeling better today.

<sup>174.</sup> A shock of corn is a number of corn sheaves stacked together on end to cure and dry. 175. The son of Bird and Mary Linkous, Dr. Maury Burgess Linkous (1874–1933) was a local physician. He lived on Price's Fork Road, near his family's store building, which actually housed his medical office at the east end of its first floor, and, in 1918, married Mary Virginia Kirk (1885–1969), a school teacher originally from Oklahoma. Mr. and Mrs. Maury Burgess Linkous, Jr. currently reside in Blacksburg at Warm Hearth Village.

<sup>176.</sup> A local veterinarian, Dr. Holly was probably a descendant of Thomas Holly, the North Carolina shoemaker whom James Randal Kent brought to his estate to make shoes for both the Kents and their slaves.

<sup>177.</sup> Mrs. James Lee Wall is Dora Myrtle (Price) Wall (1885–1959), the daughter of Henry Davidson Price and Melvinia Jane Price.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Miss Hattie Wall" is possibly Harriet "Hattie" Wall (1906–1999), the Jim Walls' daughter, who married Fred Anderson Guynn, but more likely Jim Wall's sister Hattie.

Friday, October 15 Cold & windy today. Had a hay stack put in horse barn. Had 7 calves branded and watched cows out of corn field. Julia has suffered with cramps in her stomach all day and is not feeling well yet. Cows did better tonight.

Saturday, October 16 I stripped cow barn. Harve got a load of coal from Shaffer Price<sup>178</sup> for me. He went after a load of Bran, but they did not have any. Got 28 lbs. of 20 percent cream from cows this PM.

Sunday, October 17 Julia was not feeling well enough to drive to church, so I rode Russet there. Jim Cowan & wife joined me at the gate and we went out & returned together. We all took dinner at Alex's.

Monday, October 18 I rode to town on business and got windows for the cow barn. Fixed up stove in separator house. Got some chop & bran from Mill for cows. Clear & cool. I fixed separator. J.B. & W. A. Price<sup>179</sup> came by and told me where we could get some more sheep.

Thursday, October 21 I rode to John Flanagan's & spent the day waiting for Will Trollinger to bring my sheep. I bought 15 Ewes at \$6.50. 180 Brought them home this Evening, got here at 7 PM. I had a good dinner there and enjoyed the day.

Friday, October 22 Harve & Hub Snider finished drilling their wheat in new ground. Had harrows & plows brought in. Got some stock in place & salted. Julia & I drove to Town and called at Dr. Wilson's & Dr. Barringer's. Took oyster supper at restaurant. Hampton Hoge took dinner with us. Got home at 8 PM.

Saturday, October 23 I had 12 cows & yearlings dehorned at Price's Fork. Mary Lou Black & Dan Hoge spent the day with us. Rained this afternoon. They drove home in our buggy as it had a top. We enjoyed having them.

<sup>178.</sup> Solomon Shaffer Price (1880–1936) was the son of Jonas Henry Price and Louisa Ann Snider. He never married. Shaffer Price worked in the Brush Mountain coal mines and also as a farmhand and general laborer.

<sup>179.</sup> Walter Alexander Price (b. 1880) was the Henry Davidson Prices' son. In 1910 he married Melissa Alice Olinger (1888–1961), the daughter of Hugh Otey "Ote" Olinger and Charlotte Virginia Shepherd. Walter Price operated the Price's Fork Mill and financed several coal mining operations undertaken by his brothers at Stroubles Creek on Price Mountain. In 1919 he succeeded Daniel Oliver Matthews as superintendent of grounds and buildings at V.P.I.

<sup>180.</sup> Otey means \$6.50 each.

**Sunday, October 24** We did not Drive to Blacksburg to church. Went to Matamoros and heard Rev. R. B. Nelson. Commenced the Sunday school there. Had a good school and we all enjoyed the Sermon.

Monday, October 25 I fixed more cow stalls in barn. Harve did a lot of odd jobs. Julia drove to Town on business; she had nice meals today.

Tuesday, October 26 Disked Julia's corn patch in garden and harrowed it good to put in wheat. Sam Jones (the Bull) worried me by throwing fence to hog pen and eating up the corn.

Wednesday, October 27 I had wheat drilled in the garden. Took old Coal house down to make a calf shed. Julia drove to town and met Mrs. Mack Ingles & daughter Miss Laura Ingles. 181 They came & we are enjoying their visit so much.

Thursday, October 28 Had three logs taken to mill to saw into strips for horse barn. Mrs. Ingles, Miss Ingles, Julia, & myself drove to Lovers' Leap before dinner. A Mr. Cornell took some pictures for Postal cards of this farm. Beautiful day, not cool.

Friday, October 29 I took Mrs. Ingles & Miss Laura to railroad at Vicker. Got there at 12 o'clock. John Hoge of Giles County, wife and Isabelle, their youngest child, <sup>182</sup> William Lybrook & wife, and Alice Hoge came and spent the day with us. My cows are doing splendid. Got 174 lbs. only milking 25.

Saturday, October 30 Worked on calf shed. Harve Snider got my fodder cutter from Vicker on N&W railroad. The mountain is on fire & I went to drive it back from my fences. Had a good mail. Julia had headache today.

Sunday, October 31 Julia did not go to church in Town. I rode horseback and met Julia at 2:30 PM at Sunday school at old brick church near Matamoros. Mr. Nelson was there and we had a nice Sermon by him. I heard such a good sermon by Rev. Mr. Jack<sup>183</sup> at Baptist church in

<sup>181.</sup> Laura Ingles (1881–1971), the McClanahan Ingles's daughter, married David Cloyd Barton (b. 1877), the son of Robert Barton and Lucy Thomas Cloyd.

<sup>182.</sup> John Thompson Sayers Hoge (1861–1938), his wife Florence Eliza (Snidow) Hoge (1872–1971), whom he married in 1891, and their daughter Isabelle Hume Hoge (b. 1904), who married Boyd Harshbarger (1906–1998), founder and longtime head of the Virginia Tech Department of Statistics. John T. S. Hoge was the youngest of the ten children of Joseph Haven Hoge (1820–1898) and Susan Crockett Sayers (1825–1883). Florence Eliza Snidow was the daughter of Ann Eliza Hoge (1841–1888) and John Chapman Snidow. Isabelle (Hoge) Harshbarger presently lives in Blacksburg on Country Club Drive.

<sup>183.</sup> Rev. E. B. Jackson.

Town. I took dinner with Mary Lou Black. Dan & Louise Hoge there too. A beautiful, warm day.

Monday, November 1 Had 36 shocks of corn shucked. I salted sheep & stock in mountain field, rode to Forks and arranged for place to vote in. Calf shed ready for roof. Clear, bright day. Cows did well today.

Tuesday, November 2 Election day. I was Judge all day. Did not get home until after 9 PM. James Evans, Wade Helvey, Homer Linkous<sup>184</sup> & J. Matt Price other clerks & judges. A very quite pleasant day.

Wednesday, November 3 I had cabbage buried<sup>185</sup> and more potatoes put away. Julia & I drove to Christiansburg and delivered the poll vote. Took dinner with Callie Hoge Tallant, drove back to Blacksburg, and spent night at Alex & Lizzie's. Beautiful day & we enjoyed it.

Thursday, November 4 Julia took train in Blacksburg for Roanoke. I attended to a lot of business and drove home. Found all well. Read lots of Election news. Saw that cream was put away. Am all alone tonight.

*Friday, November 5* Had telephone poles hauled today. George Snider<sup>186</sup> stripped horse barn. I tried to get Vick Davis to go cook for Lulu Hoge. Julia did not come home today, and I do miss her so so much.

Saturday, November 6 Salted and put stock in place. Had a lot of bran and chop gotten from mill for cows. Dr. P. B. Barringer & Miss Belle Buford<sup>187</sup> called. I drove to Blacksburg to meet Julia. We spent the night at Lulu Hoge's.

- 184. John Wade Helvey (1860–1918) was the son of John J. Helvey (1824–1881) and Amanda M. "Mandy" Price (1829–1881) and the grandson of Adam Price, Sr. and Nancy Collins. Wade Helvey operated a general store in Price's Fork, on the corner of present Tucker and Price's Fork Roads, and financed numerous coal mining operations. The fifth son of Bird and Mary Linkous, Homer G. Linkous (b. 1884) married Cora Bell Price (b. 1889), the Henry Davidson Prices' daughter. They had nine children.
- 185. In Otey's day farmers buried vegetables in the fall to store them for use during the winter. A hole was dug, usually somewhere in the garden, and vegetables were stored in the hole between two layers of straw, which protected them from the soil and its moisture. Otey buried celery, brussels sprouts, turnips, and other vegetables, as well as cabbage.
- 186. George D. Snider (b. 1882) was the Samuel Enos Sniders' son, the brother of Harve, Hub, and Robert Snider, John Snyder, and Berdie (Snider) Fisher, and the husband of Bessie Sue Olinger (1888–1973), whom he married in 1918. George and Bessie Sue Snider were the parents of Stanley Richard Snider, who married Ester Marie Snider, and Bertha Virginia Snider, who married Richard Lee Price. In 1925, after George Snider's death, his widow married his brother Robert James Snider (1874–1944). Robert and Bessie Sue Snider were the parents of Nellie Snider and Kelly Kent Snider, who married Florence Jeanette Bryant.

187. Most likely the Ike Bufords' granddaughter.

Sunday, November 7 Heard such a good sermon by Rev. Rhyland — subject, "Remove the stones of sin." We took dinner at Lulu's and drove home about 3 PM. I am glad to get my wife home. She got her eye-glasses.

Monday, November 8 Calvin & I tied up corn fodder that the wind tore off. Harve & Claud<sup>188</sup> hauled Telephone posts. Put up stove in our room. Beauty had a calf Saturday AM. Rained a little tonight.

Tuesday, November 9 I helped Harve get some telephone posts out of mountain and saw Frank Evans about putting them through his place. Julia drove out in the buggy to see a neighbor. A fruit agent tried to sell me trees. Rained this afternoon & tonight. Alex Long got Beauty's Bull calf.

Wednesday, November 10 Men shucking corn, putting hay stack tops on that wind blew off. <sup>189</sup> Had some hay put in the cow barn and lots of corn in the crib. I took Leonard Price some dinner. He is getting better. Splendid day for Shucking.

Thursday, November 11 Julia sick, could not attend Tea at Dr. McBryde's. I got in a nice lot of corn out of new ground. The weather is beautiful. Cows doing very well. Kept them up one or two nights.

Friday, November 12 Julia up and doing about "muchly." Got a load of coal, 37 bushels, in cellar. More corn in. We drove to Blacksburg in afternoon. Took supper with Lulu & heard Mr. Garland preach good sermon. We got home at 11:15 PM. No moon.

Saturday, November 13 Another beautiful day. Finished shucking corn in new ground. Washed buggy and Harness, salted stock, and hauled manure. Got a barrel of nice apples from Mr. J. J. Miller. We were too lazy to drive to Church tonight.

Sunday, November 14 Julia & myself drove down and had dinner and spent the day with David Cloyd & wife Manie, Lucy Cloyd, Sallie Harmon & husband, and Edward Harmon, their son. 190 We enjoyed the day. Got home about 6 PM.

Monday, November 15 David Cloyd & household came and spent the day with us. Julia had a splendid dinner. About 300 bushels of corn

- 188. Claud Harrison Olinger (1892–1950) was the son of John David Olinger and Ellen Magdalene Price. He married Ethel Virginia Surface (1898–1987), the daughter of James Crockett "Jim" Surface and Cornelia Beard. Claud and Ethel Olinger lived on present Olinger Road in the Tom's Creek area.
- 189. Typically replaced with a pitchfork when it blew off, a haystack top protected the rest of the stack by shedding water.
- 190. "Edward" Harmon is actually Edwin Houston Harmon (b. 1891), the fourth child (and eldest son) of Charles W. and Sally (Cloyd) Harmon. The Oteys visited the Cloyds and the Harmons at the Cloyds' farm, Riverside.

shucked and put in crib today. Men & women shucking. Harve Snider went off for a few days holiday. Claud Olinger in his place. Wrote Mamie Patterson a long letter tonight.

Tuesday, November 16 Men shucked 150 bushels of corn until 12 AM, got too dry. Is a beautiful, warm day. I fixed up the milk harness, 191 put up stove in the Parlor, and paid off a lot of men for shucking corn. Looks more like rain tonight.

Wednesday, November 17 Buried Turnips. Got in one load of corn. I rode to John Wall's & C.B. McDonald's on business. On my way home my mare Russet stepped on glass & cut her foot. It is getting so much colder that I will kill some hogs.

Thursday, November 18 I killed 6 nice hogs. Had 3 men besides myself and we killed & cleaned them in about 3 hours. At 2 PM they were in the Smoke house. Good & cold, blowing snow. Julia had a nice dinner at 1 o'clock.

Friday, November 19 Cut up the 6 big hogs that would have weighed 275 lbs. Made up the lard<sup>192</sup> & sausage. Measured the phone line from Matamoros into my house, 1 mile & 2/3. It took 44 posts 60 yds. apart. Julia & I are both tired after the day's work.

Saturday, November 20 Mrs. Price & Julia made two big pots of soap. 193 I stuffed sausage and put it away. Grant Eaves got offals & lots of other stuff. 194 Harvey Apperson, 195 a Mr. Dickerson, & Mr. Miller took supper with us.

Offals are the waste parts, particularly the entrails, of a butchered animal. Such entrails can be made into chitlins or used as sausage sleeves.

195. The eldest child of Dr. John S. Apperson and "Lizzie" Black, Harvey Black Apperson

<sup>191.</sup> A milking harness is a harness farmers occasionally needed to put on a dairy cow to prevent the cow from nursing herself.

<sup>192.</sup> Lard is made from the fat of hogs, which is melted down and clarified to become a white, soft solid. Each time they butchered, the Oteys made lard, which they stored in cans for future use.

<sup>193.</sup> The Oteys made soap by mixing lard from the hogs, a lye solution made from wood ashes, cold water, and other ingredients in kettles over a wood fire. When it reached the desired consistency, the mixture was allowed to cool and set up into soap, which was then cut out of the kettles and broken up into pieces for use.

<sup>194.</sup> The son of Eliza Eaves, Grant Eaves, who periodically worked for Otey, lived in the Wake Forest community and married Amy Chandler of Franklin County. He was the great-uncle of Oscar Sherman, who presently lives in Wake Forest and serves on the executive committee of the Montgomery County Coal Miners' Heritage Association.

Sunday, November 21 I rode horseback to church in Town. Took dinner with Lulu Hoge. Julia taught Sunday school at Matamoros. I got back too late to come home with her. It has been a beautiful day.

Monday, November 22 I looked over farm and rode to Forks on business. Salted meat. Mr. C. L. Miller came for his Jersey bull & calf. I helped him out to road. Men hauled in Hay to barn, got in one load of corn. Warm & dry. Miller took stock away.

Tuesday, November 23 Julia & I spent the day in town and took dinner with Alex & Lizzie at the new Hotel Tutwiler. Julia attended a guild meeting. We both attended a play by school children and did not reach home until 6 PM. Had 15 shocks of corn shucked.

Wednesday, November 24 Julia had 3 big Kettles of Soap put away. We cut Mrs. Price's hog up. Had some Telephone poles put up. Creamery statement was not so good last month. We put up 17 Phone posts and came in & milked & Separated the cream.

Thursday, November 25 I rode & took the 4 "Crows" something for Thanksgiving dinner. Got home in time for my dinner with my sweet wife. Elmer Phillips hired to work. He is from Floyd County and 18 years old.

Friday, November 26 Had 4 men putting up Phone posts all day. We got them all up. Julia sent our dinner to us on the road. I called to see Misses McDonald about their phone posts. I salted stock & counted sheep, 51. A beautiful day.

Saturday, November 27 Harve & Elmer Phillips hauled manure & bedding for cows. Fed stock in Mountain field. Julia spent day in Town. I salted and put some stock in a different field. The weather is beautiful. Grass about given out for stock.

Sunday, November 28 Julia & I drove to church in Town. She to the Episcopal & I to the Baptist. Saw Liz & Lou after church, then drove to Matamoros to Sunday school. Mr. Nelson preached. Schoolhouse full of people. Miss Bolton, <sup>197</sup> Nellie Robinson, & Mrs. Robert Nelson were there.

Monday, November 29 Had rails hauled to build a fodder pen. I fed

<sup>(1890–1948)</sup> enjoyed a long and successful career in Virginia politics. In 1947 he became Attorney General of Virginia, when Governor William M. Tuck appointed him to fill the unexpired term of Abram Penn Staples. Harvey Apperson died in office.

<sup>196.</sup> Probably a reference to some poor women in the neighborhood, perhaps the four Misses Long mentioned three weeks later in his December 15 entry. Otey was known for his generosity to the needy in the Tom's Creek community.

<sup>197.</sup> Maria Bolton (d. 1921) was probably Cora (Bolton) McBryde's sister. She frequently served as a chaperon at V.P.I. dances.

cows turnips and rode to Forks on business. Could not get a boar hog. Colder tonight. Still very dry.

Tuesday, November 30 I took Claud Olinger & put Miss Ella McDonald's Phone posts in to her home. Harve Snider & Elmer Phillips put fodder in barn. Julia canned her sausage and got us a good dinner. Beautiful day. I let Zach Price have toll for cost of Thrashing wheat & Rye. 6 bushels wheat, 1 1/4 Rye.

Wednesday, December 1 Men fed cows and hauled more fodder. I did a lot of odd jobs. Salted & counted Sheep and packed old portraits & sent them to Huntsville, Alabama. 198 Cold this AM but it got warmer during the day.

Thursday, December 2 Julia & I drove to see Put & Lizzie Adams. Spent the day there & got home about 6 PM. I had the back fence to yard pulled down and wood & fodder hauled. Julia came near having croup before we reached home.

*Friday, December* 3 Julia drove up to Blacksburg early in the day & I drove up late afternoon. Took supper at Hotel Tutwiler, attended the V.P.I. German. Spent the night with Alex & Liz. It was a pretty German & we met many friends there. 199

Saturday, December 4 After attending to business & doing some Shopping, we came home. Found all going on quietly. I cleaned Separator with gasoline. Finished getting the stack of hay in barn. Warm & clear tonight. Cook not back from visit yet.

Sunday, December 5 We drove to church in Blacksburg. Julia heard the Bishop. I heard Mr. Edwards from Salem. We came back to Sunday school at Matamoros. Has been a beautiful day. I taught Mr. Nelson's class at Sunday school. We had about 30 scholars.

Monday, December 6 Harve & Elmer Phillips worked on back yard fence. Moved old privy. It was a hard job. Hampton Hoge spent day with us and I let him have George (horse) to drive on a Hunting trip tomorrow.

Tuesday, December 7 Cold east rain. Men fed stock and beat out beans. I cleaned & fixed Separator. Old Mr. Chris Olinger<sup>200</sup> is quite ill. Ordered some springs for separator.

Wednesday, December 8 Cold and I killed 6 nice hogs by 12 o'clock

<sup>198.</sup> Otey was sending the portraits to Carolee (Pleasants) Otey's family.

<sup>199.</sup> Thirty couples, ten stags, and nine chaperones attended the 1909 Thanksgiving German in German Hall.

<sup>200.</sup> Christian Phillip "Chris" Olinger (1831–1911), the son of Michael Phillip Olinger and Elizabeth Kipps, who married Susannah Elizabeth Price (1836–1910), the daugh-

and had the men put up back yard fence after 12.

**Thursday, December 9** Cut up hogs. Cut up Sausage meat & Lard. Made up some of the lard. I rode over to Linkous' Store & phoned about old hams I sold to Dr. Barringer. Very cold.

Friday, December 10 Made sausage, mixed & stuffed it, made pudding<sup>201</sup> & Lard too. Mrs. Price (our cook) left today. May move away tomorrow. Not as cold tonight as it was this AM.

Saturday, December 11 We finished the back yard fence and worked on fence at the ice house. Got my boar hog home from Robert H. Price. He is 10 months old and cost me \$15.00. Got 3 Plymouth Rock roosters from James B. Price. Got some bran for cows. Mrs. Price helped milk. Cows have gone down in milk.

Sunday, December 12 Cloudy & threatening rain. We did not drive to Town to church but drove to Matamoros. A good many there considering the weather. Mr. Nelson came but did not preach as he went to bury a man. Elmer Phillips & I did the milking.

Monday, December 13 Sleet & raining. The John Price family moved away. Harve Snider gone too, so I am out of milkers & farm hands. I am doing the milking of about 26 cows with one boy, Elmer Phillips. Julia has no cook.

Tuesday, December 14 After doing all the morning's work, Julia & I got in the buggy and drove to Dr. Black's farm on Roanoke River to get a woman to milk; did not get her. We took dinner at the Hotel in Blacksburg. It was a long, rough drive and we did not get home until 7 PM.

Wednesday, December 15 Julia took the 4 Miss Longs Xmas things.<sup>202</sup> Elmer Phillips & I milked the 26 cows, fed & cleaned up stables. Claud Olinger came and they hauled manure until dinner. Mr. Broce<sup>203</sup> came & we all helped put up Phone. Got 1/2 way with the wire. I milked with 3 boys to help.

ter of Henry D. Price and Polly Surface. Chris Olinger is the progenitor of all the Olingers in the Price's Fork, Tom's Creek, and Sunnyside communities.

<sup>201.</sup> Made from a hog's liver (and sometimes lungs) mixed with bread crumbs, lard, eggs, onions, etc., liver pudding is an old-time dish that was especially popular in the South. Like sausage, it was usually made up in large quantities and preserved for later use.

<sup>202.</sup> Probably Sarah, Debbie, and Delila Long (the unmarried daughters of James Long, Sr.) and Sarah's unmarried daughter Louvenia.

<sup>203.</sup> Apparently Memminger C. Broce. The son of Samuel R. Broce, Memminger Broce was part owner of a 2,963.96-acre tract between Gap Mountain and Brush Mountain, which H. C. Hower and Henry Shallenberger bought in 1923.

Thursday, December 16 Jim Cowan came at 9 PM last night and we enjoyed his visit. He & Jim Price helped me drive 4 cows to Forks where I sold them to John Flanagan.<sup>204</sup> I fixed Separator & did many odd jobs after I got back. I got 3 cents for 2 cows & 2 1/2 for the other two.<sup>205</sup>

Friday, December 17 I sent the milk to creamery by Leonard Price and rode in myself on horseback. Broce phoned me to come home as he wanted to put up my Phone. We worked hard on it. I am very tired tonight.

Saturday, December 18 Got the Phone up today and we are talking to our friends. Had lots of calls over it tonight. It is cold but we worked hard to get Phone finished. Had everything scalded well at Spring house. Sent milk again today. Phone up.

Sunday, December 19 We did not go to church in Town, too cold. We attended Sunday school at Matamoros. The new organ has come. Elmer Phillips & I milked after we got back from Sunday school. Had a good school today.

Monday, December 20 Julia killed 25 nice turkeys & 7 chickens and we put them in two barrels. Mrs. Jim Kitts<sup>207</sup> & Minnie Snyder helped pick them. Claud Olinger & Elmer also helped. It was a very busy day for us all and we are so tired tonight.

Tuesday, December 21 Sent turkeys to Vicker to N&W railroad by Claud Olinger. I rode to Pepper's Ferry and hired a man by name of Henry as farm hand. I took dinner with David Cloyd, Jr. & wife and got home about 6 PM.

Wednesday, December 22 Cold & blowing snow. Men fed stock & put straw for bedding in barn & hog house. Leonard had a cold drive delivering milk. I doctored a cow & worked around cow barn. Stock are eating winter feed good this weather. My fodder going fast, hay too.

Thursday, December 23 I sent farm wagon to Town after Bran & other cow feed, got 1 ton. I drove up in the double buggy. Did lot of Xmas shopping. Julia made fruit cake and worked much.

Friday, December 24 Had several men getting out ice at the old mill pond of Zach Price's. Got 19 or 20 loads in ice house. I called to see

<sup>204.</sup> Born and reared at the Flanagan place on the New River, John T. Flanagan and his wife Cynthia lived and farmed near Pepper's Ferry.

<sup>205. 3</sup> cents and 2 1/2 cents per pound.

<sup>206.</sup> The Oteys raised many of their turkeys for sale to markets in the North. The turkeys were slaughtered, hung, plucked, packed in barrels, and shipped on the railroad.

<sup>207.</sup> The wife of James "Jim" Kitts, the natural son of John Wade Helvey.

old Mr. Chris Olinger who is sick. Grant Eaves helped Julia in Kitchen some today.

Saturday, December 25 About 3 or 4 inches of snow — first time ground has been covered this winter. Julia & I are alone with one farm hand, Elmer Phillips. She had a mighty good dinner. We enjoyed talking to our friends over the phone. Colder tonight.

Sunday, December 26 Wind blowing hard and much Snow flying. Too cold to think of driving to church. Took my time and fed and made the stock comfortable. I did not let the cows out, only long enough to get water. Elmer & Leonard helped me milk this PM.

Monday, December 27 I pulled out some ice 6 to 8 inches thick at ford back of barn. Got in a lot of men after dinner and finished filling the house. Staples Price to milk. Elmer Phillips & Claud Olinger fed stock and hunted Rabbits.

Tuesday, December 28 I feel very badly. After milking I came to the house and was lying on bed most of today. Dr. Spencer & J. B. Price were hunting here and came in & took dinner with us. They gave us six birds & a Rabbit. We had such a nice card from Aunt Margie today.

Wednesday, December 29 Cold rough day. Leonard Price had a rough trip to creamery. I feel a little better. Helped Julia fix north Kitchen window and one upstairs. Colder than it was this AM, and the phone is a comfort today.

Thursday, December 30 I am feeling fine. Work going on nice although it is down to zero weather. James Evans' little baby boy Paris is very ill this AM. Julia got returns from turkeys; they came to nearly \$90.00. Julia sent Lizzie Black & Mrs. R. B. Nelson some nice Birds. We have had birds and Rabbits all week.

Friday, December 31 Little Paris Evans died about 3 PM yesterday. Julia & I drove to his burial today at 2 PM. The other Twin is better. Not as cold and the Snow is going off. Stock have come through the rough weather in good shape. We thank God for all the blessings of the year.

<sup>208.</sup> James Paris Evans (1908–1909) was the son of Jim and Mary Jane Evans; his twin was James F. "Jim" Evans, Jr.

## **Book Review**

## Edited by Tom Costa University of Virginia's College at Wise

John Alexander Williams. *Appalachia: A History*. (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2002. Pp. xv, 473. \$19.95, ISBN 0-8078-5368-2).

John Alexander Williams, professor of history at Appalachian State University, Boone, North Carolina, provides a sweeping, yet critical and detailed, history of the Appalachian region. Appalachia occupies a crucial place both in the geography and the imagination of America. Geographically, Appalachia is a region defined by the Allegheny Mountains and Cumberland Plateau to the north and west, by the Blue Ridge to the east and south. Nestled between these ranges, daunting to many Europeans from the eastern shore, lies the Great Valley. Politically, the region has been expanded to include 406 counties from New York to Mississippi, covered by the Appalachian Regional Commission. Williams frequently distinguishes between the official region and the core, which includes parts of Georgia, North Carolina, Tennessee, Kentucky, and Virginia, and all of West Virginia. While part of "official" but not "core" Appalachia, Pennsylvania plays a major role in Williams' account not only because many of the first Europeans passed through it, but also because of the key role its citizens played in the nineteenth century industrialization of the rest of the region.

In the American imagination, Appalachia has been a barrier to west-ward expansion, a haven for those either escaping or expelled from the "civilized" east, a place peopled by feudalists distrustful of outsiders, the isolated home of "our contemporary ancestors" or "yesterday's people," a region rich in exploitable resources, and a problem area resistant to modernization. Williams takes a postmodern approach to regionalism that "recognizes that every place is a zone characterized by the interaction of global and local human and environmental forces and that regional boundaries inevitably shift with the perspectives of both subject and object" (12). Thus both physical and cultural diversity play a major

role as he describes four and a half centuries of interaction between peoples and place.

Much of Appalachia's past, present, and yet to be determined future is about roads. So it is appropriate that Williams' opening line is, "There's no better place to begin a history of Appalachia than the bus station outside Wytheville, Virginia" (1). The intersection of Interstates 77 and 81 is a text or metaphor for the explication of a story that begins with the de Soto expedition in 1539 and ends with the bus services to the casino on the Cherokee reservation. Williams has, in addition to his scholarly background, a traveler's first-hand knowledge of the region that enlivens his narrative, and he backs that up with many of his own photographs.

Following the introduction are five chronologically overlapping chapters. "Chapter One: The Roads to Qualla, 1540–1840," begins with Spanish contact and ends with Indian Removal. Williams emphasizes the diversity of both Native Americans and Europeans. "...the European and native peoples that collided in Appalachia during the latter half of the eighteenth century were on each side multiethnic, multilingual societies shaped by earlier generations' experience of warfare, migration, and disease... Rather it was a zone where the familiar categories of human difference — languages, economic roles, ethnic identities, customs and habits, even the distinctions between men and women and between slave and free — blurred and overlapped" (25-26). The history is not one of European settlement, but of a series of displacements (30). Those who displaced Native Americans would often themselves be displaced when confronted by others with greater legal and economic resources.

"Chapter Two: In the Ocean of Mountains, 1790–1870," begins with naturalist William Bartram's discovery of the biological diversity of the region and concludes with John Fee's founding of the interracial and integrated town of Berea. While the people of Appalachia had many potential sources of political strength, local elites remained committed to lowland politics. The highland counties were divided among several states and separated by geography and culture from the state capitals. While their elected officials cultivated a home base, they saw that any hope for higher office would require they extend their loyalties to the plantation economy outside the region rather than the farm-and-forest economy within it. Pre-war Appalachia was not without industry. Numerous iron works were developed in the region. Salt was mined in the

Kanawha Valley, Clay County, Kentucky, and Saltville, Virginia. The Copper Basin in western North Carolina was being developed. While some slaves were used in mountain agriculture, most were employed in industry.

"Chapter Three: Blood and Legends, 1860–1920," begins with the election campaigns of 1860 and ends with one of the few positive idealizations of the mountaineer, that of Sergeant Alvin York. During the Civil War, the Great Valley was of major strategic significance, so the mountains framing the valley became havens for raiders on both sides. Local issues or patterns of kinship often determined loyalty to either North or South. Deserters from both sides ended up in the mountains as well. Appalachia's reputation for violence emerged after the war. Partly because of experience in guerilla warfare, partly because of heightened competition for land and other resources, partly because of the Hayes administration's enforcement of the liquor tax, violence did occur. And the market for lurid, sensationalized accounts of mountain violence was growing. Evangelical churches and social reformers under the influence of the settlement movement founded schools to educate and civilize the mountain people.

"Chapter Four: Standing the Times, 1880–1940" covers speculative capital investment, often fueled by the development of railroads, the accompanying development of extractive industry, labor unrest in both coal and textiles, the founding of progressive institutions such as the Council of the Southern Mountains and the Highlander Folk School, the increasing importance of the federal government through the U. S. Forest Service, the National Park Service, and the Tennessee Valley Authority, and the rise of country music.

"Chapter Five: Crisis and Renewal, 1930–2000" covers the "Appalachian diaspora" (313), social-scientific studies of the people who stayed as well as those who left, the Appalachian Regional Commission, the War on Poverty, movements for social and environmental justice, and the Appalachian Studies Association. The Appalachian diaspora, the migration of people from the mountains to northern industrial cities — Detroit, Chicago, Cincinnati and Akron — has multiple causes. Workers were pulled by the growth of industry following WW II. They were pushed by declining employment in coal. Mechanization of mining, an increase in surface mining relative to underground mining, and the development of coal reserves in the western United States have all con-

tributed to the loss of jobs. Though coal production remains high, Wal-Mart employs more people in West Virginia than any coal company (346). When the Appalachian Regional Commission was created, Congress ensured that it would not have the political autonomy of TVA. Most of its efforts have been directed toward road construction. "Growth centers," such as Asheville, Knoxville, or Pikeville, Kentucky, saw development largely as the result of highway construction. Governors and "Local Development Districts" determine which non-highway projects get funding. The War on Poverty brought VISTA workers to the region. The requirement for "maximum citizen participation" meant an increasing number of local activists. While political reaction against youth and citizen involvement may well have killed the War on Poverty, many of those involved have continued their community-based work. The results are social and environmental justice movements such as Save Our Cumberland Mountains, Kentuckians for the Commonwealth, and Western North Carolina Alliance. Writers such as James Brown, Helen Lewis. John Stephenson, Jack Weller, Harry Caudill, and Rupert Vance have not only brought the region to national attention, but have helped shape the region through their influence on public policy. In 1977–78 activists and scholars formed the Appalachian Studies Association. From its modest beginnings it has grown to more than 600 members [including Williams, the reviewer, and the book review editor and publishes its own iournal.

Williams concludes the fifth chapter with an analysis of government spending since the beginning of the cold war era. This is a period of military Keynesianism, economic growth stimulated by Defense Department spending. "Only in Alabama did Appalachian counties receive a larger share of statewide defense-related expenditures relative to their population or area" (367). Just as nineteenth-century political leaders of the region identified with those outside the region, so Howard Baker of Tennessee, Sam Ervin of North Carolina, and even Robert Byrd of West Virginia (until stepping down as Majority Leader) built reputations on national issues but did not bring defense dollars into their home areas. After focusing on defense spending in Huntsville, Alabama, Williams concludes, "Clearly, if federal funds had been invested in other Appalachian places on a scale comparable with that in Huntsville, there would have been no Appalachian crisis" (379).

Williams effectively interweaves anthropology, popular culture, biography, labor history, economic history, environmental history, and scholarly reliance on original source materials to create a readable, engrossing, enlightening, and comprehensive history of Appalachia. Particularly effective is his use of biography to organize other themes. Much of Chapter Two is organized around the life and work of circuit riding evangelist Bishop Francis Asbury. Country music pioneer Ernest "Pop" Stoneman is a central figure for Chapter Four. Sociologist and activist Helen Lewis is featured in Chapter Five. There are twenty pages of notes and an excellent bibliography of eighteen pages.

I successfully used Williams' book as a text in an undergraduate Appalachian History course this past fall semester. Because Williams is readable, accurate, and thorough, I did not have to spend time correcting the text, explaining the text, nor identifying what the text failed to cover. Instead I could develop those themes and events of particular interest to myself. Williams gives very good coverage to the West Virginia mine wars, so I focused on the Harlan County, Kentucky, mine wars. Williams gives broad coverage to the textile industry in Tennessee and North Carolina, so I could talk about how the same forces that brought the textile industry to the Appalachian south have today taken it to Central America.

Not only will this be the standard text for Appalachian history, it will be the best single source for the general reader who wants to learn more about the region. It will, as all histories, become outdated with the passage of time. Let's hope that John Williams has a second, even a third edition, in the future.

David L. Rouse The University of Virginia's College at Wise

## **Index to Volume Seven**

Numerals in italics indicate words in captions.

Married women are listed under the maiden name,
with the married name in parentheses.

ABBOTT, Francis Harris "Frank"	96
Abingdon, Virginia	28, 30
ADAMS	
John Putnam "Put"	20, 131
Liz	
Richard	117
Afton Inn	114
Alexander Black house	
Alleghany Chapter of the NSDAR	
Alleghany Hotel	
ALLEN, Ann (Mrs. T.)	
American Review, The	
American Revolution	
Amiss Hotel, Blacksburg	•
ANDERSON	
Edward Randolph	97
Frank McDaniel	
Joseph Mason	
Anderson and Borden	
Appalachia: A History4,	. 135-9
Appalachian	,
Regional Commission	, 137-8
State University	135
Studies Association	37, 138
APPERSON	
Harvey Black	129-30
John S., Dr	129
Kent	86
Apperson Park (Blacksburg)	86
APVA, see Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities	
ARBUTHNOT, Elizabeth (Bell)	89
"Argus"	31-3
ARONHIME, Gordon	42-3
ASBURY, Francis, bishop	139
Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities 3, 23, 24, 25, 26, 53,	, 54, 57
Augusta, Virginia	30
"Aunt Margie", see Margaret Gordon Kent	88
BAKER, Howard	138
BALDWIN, Cary (H. C. Preston)	
Bannister Parish, Pittsylvania County, Va.	61

Baptist Church	
Blacksburg	94, 98
of Kentucky	
BARGER	
Casper	7
Philip	9-10
BARNETT, Henry C	
BARRETT, Marian Amelia (J. O. Hoge)	83
BARRIER, Casper	
BARRINGER	
Paul Brandon	106, 125, 127, 132
Victor Clay	
BARTON, David Cloyd and Robert	
BARTRAM, William	
BATTLE	
James Smith	113
Maud Cowan	
Mrs., see Josephine John Anna Somerville	
William Smith	113
Battle of	113
Cowpens	34
Gettysburg	
Kings Mountain	
BEAL, BEALE	5, 21 7, 55 1,56 7
Ann Radford	69
Anna, Anne	
Charles Trigg "Charley"	
William Radford	
BEARD, Cornelia (J. C. Surface)	•
"Beaver Dam" or "draft" or "draught"	
BELL	
Bessie, see Elizabeth Arbuthnot	
Elizabeth "Bessie" (J. B. Ricketts)	106
Elizabeth Kent (J. R. Crockett)	
Ellen Howe (O. R. Magill)	
Evelyn Gray (J. H. Tyler Jr.)	
Francis Jr	
Frank	
Gordon Cloyd	
Jim	
Mary Lou (Mrs. Kent Black)	
Mary Lou (J. A. Blakemore)	
Mary Peck	
Nellie, see Ellen Gordon Kent	
Sarah James (R. E. Wysor)	106, 112
Sarah Kent	

Ben Greet Shakespearean Players       100         Benjamin (two graves) (one d. 1840)       64, 70         BENTLEY       109         Lucy Gaines (W. T. Hart)       89, 109         Berea College, Kentucky       136         BERKELEY       George Iverson       97         John Campbell       97         Lavinia Hart       64, 70         Norborne, Col.       64
BENTLEY       109         Henry Moss       109         Lucy Gaines (W. T. Hart)       89, 109         Berea College, Kentucky       136         BERKELEY       97         John Campbell       97         Lavinia Hart       64, 70
Henry Moss       109         Lucy Gaines (W. T. Hart)       89, 109         Berea College, Kentucky       136         BERKELEY       97         John Campbell       97         Lavinia Hart       64, 70
Lucy Gaines (W. T. Hart)       89, 109         Berea College, Kentucky       136         BERKELEY       97         John Campbell       97         Lavinia Hart       64, 70
Berea College, Kentucky
BERKELEY         97           George Iverson         97           John Campbell         97           Lavinia Hart         64, 70
George Iverson       97         John Campbell       97         Lavinia Hart       64, 70
John Campbell
Lavinia Hart 64, 70
Norborne, Col 64
BIBB
Emily Julia (J. J. Pleasants)
Pamela
Thomas
William Wyatt 108
BINNERS, Julia
BLACK family
Alexander "Alex"
116, 117, 118, 123, 125, 127, 131
Charlie
Harvey, Dr
Jane (F. F. McDonald)
Kent, Dr
Lizzie (J. D. Apperson)
Lizzie, see Elizabeth Kent Otey
Mary Irby
Mary Lou (Mrs. Kent Black)
Mary Louise (J. H. Luster)
, ,
Mrs. C. W
Black Land Fruit Farm
Blackburn's Orchestra
Blacksburg
Baptist Church
Milling and Supply Company
Power and Supply Company
Presbyterian Church
Westview Cemetery
BLAIR, Francis Preston
Blair House, Washington, D.C
BLAKEMORE, John Augustus112
BOCOCK, Branch B
BOLTON
Cora (J. M. McBryde)
Maria
Botetourt County, Virginia27-8

BOULWARE	
Aubin Lee	23-4, 24, 25
Jane "Janie", see Jane Grace Preston	., .,
Janie Preston (B. Lamb)	. 22, 24, 25, 26, 26, 61-2
BOWMAN, colored freeman at Battle of King's Mountain.	
BOYD, Clifford	
Braddock's defeat	
BRADY (artist)	• • • •
BRITTAIN, Ida (W. Dunlap)	
BROADY (Broaddy, Brody, Broddy)	112
John	27 44
Milly (John's wife)	
, ,	
BROCE, Memminger C.	
BROGAN, E. V	103
BROWN	
Elias	
Ellen Apperson	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
James	
BRYANT, Florence Jeanette (K. K. Snider)	127
BUCHANAN, Col. John	11
BUFORD	
Belle	127
Ike	88, 127
John	120
Paschal Kent	88
Sallie	
Bugle, VPI Yearbook	
"Buzzards' Roost" = Lybrook Row	
BYRD, Robert	
DITE, Robert	130
CALDWELL, Perlina Frances (D. T. Graham)	123
Calvin, see Calvin Kyle	123
Camp Carysbrook	61
CAMPBELL	
	20
Charles Henry	
Robert	
Sarah Buchanan (F. Preston)	
Thomas	
William, Col.	
CAPERS, Virginia "Aunt Ginny"	63-4, 70, 75: note 73
CAPERTON	
M. E	
Sarah Ann (1826-1908) (J. F. Preston)	
Virginia	
CARRINGTON, Elizabeth (G. H. Gilmer)	
CARSON, Sr	58

Emma         84           Ione         84-5           Wiltshire N.         84,10           W. R.         106, 108, 120           Cassey         78           CASSELL, George E., judge         96, 101           CAUDILL, Harry         138           Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky         62           Cawtauba Indians         8           Central Presbyterian Church, Radford         101           CHAMBERS, Whig deserter         36           CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)         129           CHAPMAN         1da (W. M. Lybrook St.)           Ida (W. M. Lybrook St.)         100           Nancy (J. McDonald)         78           CHARLTON, Malinda         20           Chatham Cemetery         62           Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's         100           Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon         35           Christ Episcopal Church         87, 99, 100           Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg         100 <th>CARY</th> <th></th>	CARY	
Wiltshire N.       84, 110         W. R.       106, 108, 120         Casey       78         CASSELL, George E., judge       96, 101         CAUDILL, Harry       138         Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky       62         Cavtauba Indians       8         Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chetap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       30         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126     <	Emma	84
W. R.       106, 108, 120         Cassey       78         CASSELL, George E., judge       96, 101         CAUDILL, Harry       138         Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky       62         Cawtauba Indians       8         Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       100         Ida (W. M. Lybrook St.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       20         David McNutt Jt.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126	Ione	84-5
W. R.       106, 108, 120         Cassey       78         CASSELL, George E., judge       96, 101         CAUDILL, Harry       138         Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky       62         Cawtauba Indians       8         Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       100         Ida (W. M. Lybrook St.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       20         David McNutt Jt.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126	Wiltshire N.	84, 110
Cassey         78           CASSELL, George E., judge         96, 101           CAUDILL, Harry         138           Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky         62           Cawtauba Indians         8           Central Presbyterian Church, Radford         101           CHAMBERS, Whig deserter         36           CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)         129           CHAPMAN         1da (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)         100           Nancy (J. McDonald)         78           CHARLTON, Malinda         20           Chatham Cemetery         62           Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's         100           Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon         35           Christ Episcopal Church         87, 99, 100           Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg         100           CLARKE, Elijah, Col.         34, 36           Clemson College, University         123           CLEVELAND, Col.         36, 38           CLINTON, Sir Henry         33           David McNutt Jr.         85, 110, 128, 133           David McNutt Sr.         85, 110           Gordon, Gen'l         85           Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)         126           Sally (C. S. Harmon)         126		•
CASSELL, George E., judge       96, 101         CAUDILL, Harry       138         Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky       62         Cawtauba Indians       8         Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       100         Ida (W. M. Lybrook St.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Coffman, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28		• •
CAUDILL, Harry       138         Cavetauba Indians       8         Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       100         Ida (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         COI Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN	•	
Cavehill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky         62           Cawtauba Indians         8           Central Presbyterian Church, Radford         101           CHAMBERS, Whig deserter         36           CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)         129           CHAPMAN         1da (W. M. Lybrook St.)         100           Nancy (J. McDonald)         78           CHARLTON, Malinda         20           Chatham Cemetery         62           Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's         100           Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon         35           Christ Episcopal Church         87, 99, 100           Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg         100           CLARKE, Elijah, Col.         34, 36           Clemson College, University         123           CLEVELAND, Col.         36, 38           CLINTON, Sir Henry         33           CLOYD         85, 110, 128, 133           David McNutt Jr.         85, 110           Gordon, Gen'l         85           Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)         126           Sally (C. S. Harmon)         126           Coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac         120           COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)         69           COL Alto (house)	the state of the s	
Cawtauba Indians       8         Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       100         Ida (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       35, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110, 128, 133         Col Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28 <t< td=""><td></td><td></td></t<>		
Central Presbyterian Church, Radford       101         CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       Ida (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       30         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       35         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       100         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucind		
CHAMBERS, Whig deserter       36         CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       1da (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       36, 38         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Leman       120         Col-EMAN       110         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann		
CHANDLER, Amy (G. Eaves)       129         CHAPMAN       Ida (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       36, 38         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85, 110         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Leman       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy		
CHAPMAN       Ida (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       35, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Na	· · ·	
Ida (W. M. Lybrook Sr.)       100         Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)		127
Nancy (J. McDonald)       78         CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       126         Soal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price St.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.) <td< td=""><td></td><td>100</td></td<>		100
CHARLTON, Malinda       20         Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       35         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       10		
Chatham Cemetery       62         Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	·	
Cheap Cash Store, Lybrook's       100         Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	•	
Chiswell's Lead Mines, Abingdon       35         Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       40         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
Christ Episcopal Church       87, 99, 100         Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       4nn Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	•	
Civic Improvement League of Blacksburg       100         CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       40         Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price St.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
CLARKE, Elijah, Col.       34, 36         Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
Clemson College, University       123         CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Jr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       30, 120         COLES       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
CLEVELAND, Col.       36, 38         CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
CLINTON, Sir Henry       33         CLOYD       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	
CLOYD       David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
David McNutt Jr.       85, 110, 128, 133         David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	•	33
David McNutt Sr.       85, 110         Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
Gordon, Gen'l       85         Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)       126         Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	David McNutt Sr	85, 110
Sally (C. S. Harmon)       128         coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Gordon, Gen'l	85
coal mines, McCoy, Merrimac       120         COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Lucy Thomas (R. Barton)	126
COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)       69         Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Sally (C. S. Harmon)	128
Col Alto (house)       28         COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       80, 120         COLES       80, 120         Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		
COLEMAN       120         Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       80, 120         COLES       80, 120         Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	COFFMAN, Elnora (R. B. Preston Jr.)	69
Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)       120         Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Col Alto (house)	28
Lucinda (H. Tyler)       80, 120         COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	COLEMAN	
COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Huldah (D. C. DeJarnette)	120
COLES       Ann Preston       56, 68         Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Lucinda (H. Tyler)	80, 120
Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		•
Walter       68         COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81	Ann Preston	56, 68
COLLINS, Nancy (A. Price Sr.)       127         Communicator, The       31-3         CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)       105         COOK, David       81		·
CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)		
CONRAD, Nelson (and Mrs.)		
COOK, David81		
	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	

COOPER, Minnie Mae (H. B. Graham)
CORNELL, Mr
Cornell University
CORNWALLIS, Gen'l
CORY , Caroline Joyes
Cotillion Club, V.P.I. dance club
Council of the Southern Mountains
COWAN family
Jim
John Thomas, Major "Uncle John" (m. Margaret Gordon Kent) 88, 117
Mary
Maud (Mrs. Jim Cowan)
Cowan's Mill
COX, Nannie Ellen
COYNER, Mr
CRAFT, Craft Hollow
CRAIG, Clementine Venable (E. Hammet)
CRAWFORD, Whig deserter
CROCKETT
James Randall
Joseph McGavock116
Samuel Rush "Sam"
CROMER
Henrietta J. "Ett" (W. H. Saville)
John86
Mary Catherine (P. C. Shepherd)
Sarah Elizabeth (E. E. Price)
William Thomas "Tom"
Croy-Dawson diaries
CRUGER, Major
CULL, James
CURRIE, Stella Hogan (F. Bell Jr.)
DABNEY, S. Gordon 55
DASHIELL, William Robert, Capt
DAVENPORT, Mr
DAVIDSON, Robert James
Davidson College
DAVIS
John James
·
Vick
DAWSON, Rosanna Croy
DeJARNETTE "CONTROLLED "CONTRO
Carolyn Hampton "Callie" (W. L. Keyser)
Daniel C
Hulda (D. DeJarnette)

DeJARNETTE (continued) Jane Coleman (G. Tyler)	114
Nicey Ann Hawes (Hoge)	
Rashe	
Sallie Lewis (J. T. Howe)	87
DEKKER, Henry J.	
Delp's Hotel	
DENNY, Rev. Dr. Collins	
DePEYSTER	
DEW, Lelia (W. B. Preston III)	
DICKERSON, MR.	
DINWIDDIE, Governor	
Dixie Hotel	
DORMAN, John	
Dr. Harvey Black Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy	
"draft" or "draught" or "Beaver Dam"	
DRAPER	
Betty, Bettie	7 0 13 15
Eleanor	
John	
Mrs. John	
Lyman C.	
Mrs. George	
DUDLEY, Mary Gordon (Olinger)	
DUKE, R. T. W., judge	
DUNDAS, Arthur B.	86
DUNLAP	440 440
Mrs. Wirt	
Wirt	
DYSART, Captain	40
EAKIN, John Lewis, Eakin's Hotel	123
EAVES	
Eliza	
Grant	•
EDMUNSTON, Major	
EDWARDS, Mr.	
ELKINS, Nancy (B. Graham)	
Ephrom (African-American child)	
ERVIN, Sam	138
ERWIN, Rev., see Irwin	
ESTES, Katherine Eva (J. H. Hoge Jr.)	
ESTILL, Mr	30-1
EVANS	
Frank	
James F. "Jim" 107, 12	
James F. "Jim" Jr	134

EVANS (continued), James Paris	124
Mary Jane (Mrs. James F. Evans)	
EYRE, Emily Ann (G. Terrill)	01, 70
Fair View	86
FARMER, Mary (McDonald)	
FEE, John	
FERGUSON, Patrick, Major	
Fincastle, Virginia	
FINCH, Alice M.	
FISHER	
John Adam	114
Radford P. "Rad"	
Sarah Mae (H. B. Olinger)	
FLANAGAN	,
Cynthia (Mrs. John T.)	133
Grant	
John T	
FLOYD	,
John, Dr	55, 62-3
John B., Gov	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
Letitia, see Letitia Preston	
Letitia (Lewis)	62
Mrs. Governor John	
Rush	
Susanna Smith	
FOGLEMAN, James Henry Boyd	
Follow the River	
FOOTE, William Henry	
Fort Cumberland	
FOSTER, Elizabeth (J. McDonald)	
FOWLKES, Ella Hyde (R. P. Stockard)	
FRACTION	
John	54, 75: note 73
Virginia	75: note 73
Frankfort, Kentucky	30
FRAZIER, Mary (H. B. Hart)	109
GADDESS, John B.	
GARLAND, Mr.	
GARY, Hartwell H. Jr.	
GATES, Horatio, Gen'l	
Gentleman's Magazine	
George Wall graveyard	
German, V.P.I. dance club	92-3, 103, 131

GILLET	
Louisa Kent Otey (H. J. Dekker)	77, 83
Norman Drysdale	
GILMER	
Catherine Jane Ann (Mrs. G. Gilmer)	56, 61
George H., Judge (1810-1874)	61, 62, 70
James Preston (d. 1852)	70
Glee Club, V.P. I.	96
GOODWIN, James Otey	111
GRAHAM	
Bryant	123
David Thomas "Tom"	123
Hubert Bryant	91
William Hubert "Billy"	91
William Thomas "Tom"	91
Graham's bank (coal mine)	91
"Granny Kouch", see Louise Talitha Scott	
GRAVES, Carrie B. (G. F. Shealor)	94
Green Hill, McDonald homeplace	
GREENE, Nathaniel	37
Greenfield plantation	27-8, 62
GUTHRIE, Manie (Cloyd)	85, 110
GUYNN, Fred Anderson	124
"ha ha" (moat)	65-6
HALE	
John P	16-18
Mr	84, 101
HALL, Harve (and Mrs.)	108
Halwick, James Hoge Tyler's home in Radford	95, 101
HAMIL, H. P., Dr. and Mrs.	•
HAMMET	
Edward, Col	95
Kathryn (N. Conrad)	105
Sue Montgomery (J. H. Tyler)	95
HANCOCK, Caroline (W. B. Preston)	55
HARDIN, Martin D., Gen'l	30
HARKNESS, John81, 82	2, 87, 88, 90, 94, 96
HARLESS, Zipporah (W. P. Snider)	82
HARMON, Charles W. and Edwin Houston "Edward"	128
HARSHBARGER, Boyd	126
HART family	64
Henry Bentley "Ben"	109
Henry Moss	109
Mary (R. T. Preston)	
Nathaniel	

HART (continued) William T 109
HARVEY, Angeline "Mrs. Mack" "Mrs. Mc Ingles" (M. Ingles)
HELVEY
John J 127
John Wade "Wade" 127, 133
Helvey Place86
HENRY
Dicy (J. H. B. Fogleman)
Elizabeth (W. Campbell, W. Russell)28, 40, 41-2, 43
Mr
Mrs. (Ida Dunlap's sister)
Patrick
Highlander Folk School
HINSHELWOOD, m. Mary Ann Word
HOGE family
Alice Dunbar (N. D. Gillet) 79, 82-3, 89-90, 105, 111-14, 111, 121, 126
Ann Eliza (J. C. Snidow)
Daniel Howe, Col 79, 84, 97, 99, 100-1, 102-3, 104, 109, 111, 112, 114, 125, 126
Eliza (G. Tyler)
Elizabeth Otey "Liz Otey" (W. S.Newman) 79, 99, 100-1, 105, 106, 111, 112
Hampton
Isabelle Hume (B. Harshbarger)
James, Gen
James Otey "Jim"
112, 117, 118
James Otey, Jr
John Hampton 79, 96
John Hampton Jr. "Rusty" 84, 95, 103, 104, 105, 111, 114, 116-17, 118, 125, 131
John Thompson Sayers 126
Joseph Haven 126
"Liz Otey", see Elizabeth Otey
Lizzie 106
Louise Kent "Tick" (E. V. Brogan) 79, 80, 103, 105, 111-12, 111, 117, 126
Lulu, see Louisa Virginia Otey
"Tick", see Louise Kent Hoge
HOLLY, Dr. and Thomas
Home News, weekly newspaper
HOPKINS, Tory
HOWE
Eleanor (J. Hoge)
John Thomas, Capt 87
HOWER, H. C
HUDNALL, Richard Henry
HUTCHESON
John Redd "Jack" 112
Thomas Barksdale Jr 112

HUTCHESON (continud) Thomas Barksdale Sr	112
HUTCHINSON	100
Bethel Irene (L. L. Price)	
Dallas Trace	122
INGLES family	
George	
John	
John	
Laura (D. C. Barton)	
Mary Draper	
McClanahan	
"Mrs. Mack", see Angeline Harvey	•
Thomas	
William, Col	5, 7, 9, 10, 14, 15, 19-20
Ingles Ferry	
Ingleside, historic home	
INGRAHAM, Mary (J. T. Whaling)	
IRWIN, Rev. L. W.	
JACK, Rev. Mr., see Rev. (Dr.) Eugene B. Jackson JACKSON	
Eugene B., Dr98	
Mary (J. Long) "Polly"	
JAMERSON, George Hariston	
James Madison University, cemetery survey crew	
JOHNSON, Albert Sidney	62
JONES	
Frank	
John Porter	92
KANODE	
Charles Bernard "Bernie"	82
James Preston	
Kanode's Mill	110
KEADLE, L. D	96
KEISTER	
Catherine "Casy"	81
George	
"old"	84
Kenawha (Kanawha) River, see also New River	
KENNEY, Anna Whitehead	
KENT	-,,,,
Ellen Gordon "Nellie" (Bell)	89
James Randall	124

KENT (continued) Margaret Gordon Kent "Aunt Margie" (J. T. Cowan) 99, 100, 102, 109, 111, 118, 121	88,
Kent's Mill	88
Kessinger & Testerman's Store	
KEYSER	-
Anna "Anne" E.	
"Callie" (Mrs. William L. Keyser)	
Edward Hampton	
Elliott	
Henry Magruder	-
Joseph DeJarnette	
William L. "Willie"	114
Kings Mountain, see Battle of	
Kings Mountain and Its Heroes (Draper)	42
Elizabeth (M. P. Olinger)	131
Hannah (C. B. Price)	
John Michael	
John Taylor	
LaDonna (W. F. Wall)	
KIRK, Mary Virginia (M. B. Linkous)	
KIRKUS, Mr.	
KITTS, James "Jim" and Mrs.	
KLATKA, Tom	
"Kouch", see Louise Talitha Scott	05, 00, 01
KYLE	
	122 120
Calvin	
Christina	94
LAFAYETTE, Marquis deLAMB	37
Aubin Boulware	22, 24, 25
Brockenbrough, Jr.	24
Frank Beverley	
Janie Preston Boulware, see Janie Preston Boulware	•
LANGHORNE, Mary Buford	85. 110
LEDGERWOOD family	
Allen	
Anderson	
Hester (Mrs. Anderson Ledgerwood)	
Isabell	
LEONARD, Henry	1, 11
LEWIS	120 120
Helen	
Joel, Capt	39

Kentucky       29, 30         Virginia       28         LIGON       124, 127         Clait       90         Ella (W. H. B. Price)       105         Homer G       127         Leslie and Mrs.       112         Mary (B. Linkous)       124         Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       33         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G       127         Linkous' Store       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       30         Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James St.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Lorge Leap <t< th=""><th>Lexington</th><th></th></t<>	Lexington	
LIGON       Bird       124, 127         Clait       90         Ella (W. H. B. Price)       105         Homer G.       127         Leslie and Mrs.       112         Mary (B. Linkous)       124         Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       31         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       127         Linkous' Store       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LOGONG       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kirah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lowers' Leap	Kentucky	29, 30
Bird	Virginia	28
Clait       90         Ella (W. H. B. Price)       105         Homer G.       127         Leslie and Mrs.       112         Mary (B. Linkous)       124         Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       33         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       127         Linkous' Store       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       34         Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James St.       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7 </td <td>LIGON</td> <td></td>	LIGON	
Ella (W. H. B. Price)       105         Homer G.       127         Leslie and Mrs.       112         Mary (B. Linkous)       124         Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       31         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       127         Linkous' Store       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Sr.       112, 122         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henty, former slave)       94         William Hourray In       100	Bird	124, 127
Homer G.	Clait	90
Homer G.	Ella (W. H. B. Price)	105
Leslie and Mrs.       112         Mary (B. Linkous)       124         Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       31         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       127         Linkous' Store       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       34         Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       18         Betty       106         J. Horace       106         J. Horace       106         J. Horace       106         John		
Mary (B. Linkous)       124         Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       127         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       39         LONG       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9<		
Maury Burgess, Dr.       124         Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       31         Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       18         Betty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Sr.		
Maury Burgess Jr.       124         Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       127         Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       39         Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         Betty       104         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Sr.       100	, ,	
Walter       82         LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       127         Homer G       127         Linkous' Store       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James St.       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         Jetty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Sr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         John B. Sr.       100     <	•	
LINCOLN, General       33         LINKOUS       Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James St.       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       8etty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. St.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Mu	, , ,	
LINKOUS       Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)       127         Homer G.       123, 132         LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       8etty         Betty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. St.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100    <		
Bird and Mary (Mrs. Bird)   127	•	
Homer G		127
Linkous' Store	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	
LOGAN, J. R., Col.       39         LONG       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       8etty       106         J. Horace       106         J. Horace       106         James O       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Ir.       99-100		
LONG       Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       19         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		•
Alex       120, 128         four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		,
four "Misses": Sarah, Debbie, Delila, Louvenia       130, 132         Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr       100         John B. Sr       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr       99-100		120 120
Jackson "Jack" (son of Sarah and Burk)       94, 110         James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr       100         John B. Sr       100         Samuel M       100         William Murray and Mrs       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr       99-100		•
James Richard "Jim Tucker"       81, 85-6         James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loysl Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
James Sr.       112, 132         John L.       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
John L       78         K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	•	•
K. B.       107         Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       8etty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	•	•
Kizrah "Kiz"       112         Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       8etty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
Margie Ann (Price)       81         Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
Sarah (m. Burk, former slave)       94         William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
William Henry       85         Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	· · ·	
Long Way Home, The       18         Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. St.       100         Samuel M       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
Lovers' Leap       116-17         Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	•	
Loyal Land Company       7         LUSTER       106         Betty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
LUSTER       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	Lovers' Leap	116-17
Betty       106         J. Horace       106         James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	Loyal Land Company	7
J. Horace		
James O.       106         Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg.       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	
Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg.       119         LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	J. Horace	106
LYBROOK       9         John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100		
John B. Jr.       100         John B. Sr.       100         Samuel M.       100         William Murray and Mrs.       99, 122, 123, 126         William Murray Jr.       99-100	Luther Memorial Lutheran Church, Blacksburg	119
John B. Sr	LYBROOK	9
Samuel M	John B. Jr	100
Samuel M	John B. Sr	100
William Murray and Mrs	•	
William Murray Jr99-100		
	•	

MAGILL, Orrin Rankin	106
MAGRUDER	
Egbert W., Dr	
Julia Virginia (Tyler)	80
Sarah "Sadie" "Sallie" (W. H. Stewart)	
MANNING, Warren	
Matamoros, schoolhouse, church 119, 121, 124, 12	
MATTHEWS, Daniel Oliver	
MAXWELL, Mr.	
McBRYDE	
Anna (Davidson)	01
John McLaren	
McBryde House	
McCONKLEY, John	
• •	103, 119
McCONNELL  Relly (Adv. Free la McConnell)	112
Belle (Mrs. Frank McConnell)	
Frank Percy	
McDONALD family	
Charles Black	
Charles Gordon	
Ellen Taylor "Ella"	
Floyd Fechtig	•
Harriet (J. McDonald)	
James Lewyn	92, 119
James Richard	92
John Alexander	78
Jonas	78
Joseph	
Katherine Lelia "Kate" (Mrs. C. B. McDonald)	83, 92, 120
Mary Edward	118, 119, 122, 124
Virginia (R. H. Wilson)	118, 119, 122
McDOWELL	
James	27, 28, 29, 30, 56
Joseph Jr., Col.	
McKINNON, Andy	
McKONKLEY	
MEANS	_
Ballard Preston	69
Courtney Hanson	
Harriet (W. R. Preston)	
John H.	
Mary Hart	
Mary Hart (Lloyd)	
Mrs. Mary	
Mrs. Preston	
Robert Preston	122

MEANS (continued) Robert Stark	•
Sallie Palmer	122
Sallie Stark	57, 69
Virginia Preston	, 60, 65, 122
MEEM, Mr.	
MICHAEL, Rudolph D 51, 52, 55,	
MILLER	30, 33, 01-0
Charles L	10 120 120
·	
Evelyn "Eva"	
"Evie (Mrs. John J.)	
Henrietta M. (H. C. Trollinger)	
James "Jim"	
John J	114-15, 128
John J. Jr	115
Julia Magruder	115
Sarah "Sadie" "Sallie"	
MINOR	
Benjamin Blake	110
•	
Jane	
Zelle	
MONTGOMERY, Roy D.	
Montgomery Branch, APVA	48, 52, 68
Montgomery County	
Coal Miners' Heritage Association	129
Courthouse	108
MOORE	
E. Overton	108
William	
MORGAN	
Daniel	3.4
N. C.	-
Mountain Lake	109
"Narrator"	
Nashville, Tennessee	
National Register of Historic Places	67
NELSON	
Robert B. (and Mrs.) 99, 109, 111, 118, 121, 122, 125, 126, 130,	131, 132, 134
New	
Mount Zion Lutheran Church Cemetery	86
River, see also Kenawha River	
St. Peter's Lutheran Church, Glade community	
York University	
NEWMAN, Walter S.	
•	99
NEWTON	
Ann (W. L. Newton)	113

NEWTON (continued) Mandy	113
William L. and Mrs	113
NOCK, Dr. A. J	
Norfolk & Western Railway Company	
Nutter's Store	
Tructer o otore	
OGLE, Elizabeth (J. McDonald)	78
OLINGER	
Bessie Sue (G. D. Snider, R. J. Snider)	127
Christian Phillip "Chris"	02 04 131 134
Claude Harrison	72, 77, 131, 137 \ 121   122   122   124
Harvey Black "Harve"	
Hugh Otey "Ote"	
John David	
Melissa Alice (W. A. Price)	125
Michael Phillip	131
Robert L. "Bob"	92
OLIVER, Sam	
OTEY	
Cloyd	94
Dr	-
Elizabeth Kent "Lizzie" (A. Black)	
106, 109, 111, 131, 134	4, 77, 101, 103, 103,
James Armistead	4, 77-134, 93, 105
Louisa Virginia "Lulu" "Lou" (J. H. Hoge, J. J. Davis)	
102, 103, 110, 116, 117, 121, 122, 123, 127, 128, 129	02 3, 03, 30, 33,
Mamie (R. M. Patterson)	106 100 122 120
Otey/Hoge Coal Mines	
, ,	
Otley, Robert and Mamie Patterson's house	102, 109
DASCOE	
PASCOE	01
James Arthur	81
Mrs., see Martha Jane Whittaker	
Thomas	
Paths of Glory by Nelly Cummings Preston	39-42
PATTERSON	
Kent	106, 116-17
Mary	106
Mrs. Robert	117
Rebecca (J. M. Crockett)	
Robert	
Robert Masquel 82, 10	
Robert Masquel, Jr	
PATTON, Col. James	
Pennsylvania Gazette, The	
Pennsylvania Railway	102

PETER, Preston slave	63
PHILIPS, Samuel	
PHILLIPS, Elmer	
PLEASANTS	
Carolee Otey	77, 108, 131
James J	
James J., Jr	
Laura Kathleen (E. O. Moore)	
POSTON, Jim	
POWERS, C. H. "Hank"	
PRESTON family	
Ann (Mrs. James Patton Preston), see Ann Barraud	
Ann Nancy (1769-1782)	
Ann Taylor (1843-1868) (W. Coles)	56 68
Archibald	
Benjamin Hart	
Caperton	
Cary Baldwin (1883-1960) (H. Gary)	
Catherine Jane Ann (1821-1852) (G. H. Gilmer)	
Edwin Page (1921-2001)	
Francis, Gen'l (1765–1835)	
Henrietta (A. S. Johnson)	
Hugh Caperton (1856-1905)	
Hugh Caperton Jr. (1893-1966)	
James Francis (1) (1813-1862)	
James Francis (2) (1878-1879)	
James Francis "Little Jimmy" (1860–1862)	57, 70, 74: note 42
James Francis II (1861-1862)	
James Patton (1) (1774-1843), Gov	23, 24, 50, 53, 54, 56, 58, 59,
60, 61, 62, 66, 68	
James Patton (2) (1838-1901)	69
James Patton (3) (1846-1920)	
Jane Grace "Janie" (A. L. Boulware) (d. 1930)	
John (1764-1827)	
Katherine "Miss Kat" (1894-1967)	
Keziah	
Letitia (Dr. J. Floyd) 5, 6, 9-10	
Lucy (W. Beale)	
Nelly Cummings	•
Robert Baldwin Jr.	
Robert Baldwin Sr.	
Robert Bowyer	
Robert Taylor, Col. (1809-1880)	
Sally	
Sarah (J. McDowell)	
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	
Sarah Ann Caperton	38, 61, 69

PRESTON (continued), Sarah Barraud (d. 1804)	68, 73: note	32
Sarah Caperton (1885-1965)	••••••	69
Sarah, Mrs	••••••••	60
Susan (c1825-1835)	68, 73: note	32
Susanna (N. Hart)		
Susanna (m. Col. William Preston), see Susanna Smith		
Susanna Edmonia (1818-1823)	55, 68, 73; note	32
Virginia Ann (1816-1833)		
Virginia Ann Emily (1834-1898) (R. S. Means)		
Waller Redd		
William		
William, of Kentucky (1768-1782)	•	
William, Col		
53, 54, 55, 57, 58, 59, 60, 62, 63, 66-7, 68, 78	,,,, ,,	,
William Ballard I (1805-1862) 22, 24, 25, 50, 56, 5	57, 58, 60, 61, 68,	<b>7</b> 8
William Ballard II (1858-1901)		
William Ballard III (1888-1959)		
William Campbell		
Preston Family Cemetery		
PRICE	1, 52, 51, 50, 51,	0)
Adam Sr.	1	27
Agnes (A. Surface)		
Amanda M. "Mandy" (J. J. Helvey)		
Ann M. (W. H. Trollinger)		
Arminta (Z. Price)		
Arminta Frances (R. P. Fisher)		
Ballard Staples		
Carolee (W. E. Snyder)		
Christian B.		
Cora Bell (H. G. Linkous)		
Cyrena (A. J. Surface)		
Dora Myrtle (J. L. Wall)		
Ellen Magdalene (J. D. Olinger)		
Enos Elias		
George M.		
George P.		
Gilbert Seymour "Sey"		
Harvey Lee		
Henry Davidson		
Hughey	., .	
James Bane		
James Brown "Jim", "Jim Saddler" 82, 83, 87, 97, 101	106 113 121 13	) [
125, 132, 134	., 100, 113, 121, 12	٠٦,
John, family	1	32
John Floyd		
J. Matt		
•		-

PRICE (continued), John Preston "Turkey John"	81
John Wesley	
Jonas Henry	
Joseph A	
Laura (C. B. Kanode)	
Leonard Law1	
Lewiza Charlotte (D. D. Shealor)	
Lillie Catherine (J. P. Kanode, J. A. Pascoe)	
Martin	
Mary Pearl (Z. Sheppard)	
Matt	
Melvinia Jane (H. D. Price)	
Michael Miller  Mrs., the cook	
	102, 107, 129, 130, 132
Mrs. John, see Eliza Ellen Cook	2.1
Myrtle B. (G. B. Vyule)	
Pemberton "Pet"	
Peter P. "P.P." "Pete Hokey"	
Ressie Elizabeth (H. J. Snider)	
Richard Lee	
Robert "Bob"	•
Robert H.	122, 132
Rosa E. (W. H. B. Price)	105
Seymour, see Gilbert Seymour	
Shaffer, see Solomon Shaffer Price	
Sheridan W	91
Solomon Shaffer	125
Staples	134
Susanna Elizabeth (C. P. Olinger)	92, 131-2
Victoria Jane (J. O. Surface)	The state of the s
Walter Alexander	
William Harvey Black "Bill"	
Zachariah "Zach"	
Price	
Hall creamery, V.P.I	89
-Manning map 48, 5	
Station, Tunnel	
Prices Fork Mill	
Princeton University	
"Put", see John Putnam Adams	
Tut, see John Futham Adams	
QUICK, Dr. Walter Jacob	92
Radford University	67
RAMSEY, Alex	
RATCLIFF, Elsie A. (D. T. Hutchinson)	
ia is obsert, block to the institute insolly	122

REDD, Lucinda Staples "Lucy" (W. B. Preston) (1819–1891)	24-5, 25, 56, 60-1, 68
REID, Bob	92
Reporter, The	30, 31-3
Revolutionary War	27, 29, 31-44
REYNOLDS, Ruth Anna (R. McDonald)	92
Reynolds Architects, Inc., Blacksburg	123
RHYLAND, Rev.	
RIBBLE, Dr.	
Richmond, Virginia	30
RICKETTS, John Baxter	106
RILEY, Agnes Graham Sanders	
RITCHIE, A.H.	
Riverside (farm)	
ROBERTSON, Mason G., Dr.	
ROBINSON	
Elizabeth "Betty" (J. Ingles)	101
Kyle	
Laura Kathleen (J. J. Pleasants)	
Nellie	•
Virginia Ann (H. R. Surface)	
ROCK, Mary Josephine (J. W. Price)	
Rockwood	
ROLLINS, Amps and Calvin	
ROUSE, David L.	
RUSSELL, William, Gen'l	
RUTHERFORD, Isabelle	
NOTTIEN OND, isabelie	······································
Sam, Preston slave	64
SARVER, Nancy (J. Long)	
SAVILLE	
Louisa Katherine "Kate" (G. S. Price)	91
Walter H.	
SAYERS, Susan Crockett (J. H. Hoge)	
SCOTT	
Elizabeth Blackford (1864-1920) (W. B. Preston II)	70
Louise Talitha "Kouch" "Granny Kouch" (S. E. Snider)	
SERPELL	
Goldsborough	118
Nelle Louise (S. H. Tyler)	
SEVIER, John, Col.	
SHALLENBERGER, Henry	
Shawnees, Shawanees	
SHEALOR	
David Daniel	94
Guy French	
•	

SHELBY	
Isaac, Col	27-44
Moses, Capt	38
SHELL	78
Virginia Ellen (W. T. Cromer)	86
SHELOR, Carrie (J.F. Price)	105
SHEPHERD	
Charlotte Virginia (H. O. Olinger)	125
Phillip Christian Jr.	93
Taylor Lincoln "Linc"	
SHEPPARD family	98
Link	93
Zachariah "Zach"	81
SHERMAN, Oscar	129
Shiloh Lutheran Church, Long Shop	119
SHORTER, Belle	
SHUTT	78
Sinking Spring Cemetery, Abingdon, Virginia	63
SLAUGHTER, Mrs.	
SMITH	
Earl Hobson	18
Elizabeth (Blair)	30
Susanna (Col. W. Preston)	58, 60, 68
Smithfield	
Board	3, 4
Plantation House	, 27-8, 49
SMYTH, Ellison A., Rev.	
SNIDER	
Berdie Mae (J. A. Fisher)	. 114, 127
Bertha Virginia (R. L. Price)	127
Ester Marie (S. R. Snider)	127
George D	. 114, 127
Harvey Jackson "Harve"	
104, 107, 114, 117, 120, 121, 122, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 131, 13	2
Ira Hubbard "Hub"81, 82, 97, 107, 114	, 125, 127
Kelly Kent	127
Louisa Ann (J. H. Price)	125
Nellie	127
Ressie (Mrs. Harvey J. Snider)	
Robert James	. 114, 127
Samuel Enos	, 114, 127
Sarah Elizabeth (J. B. Price)	82
Sarah Margaret (J. O. Surface)	
Stanley Richard	127
William Patterson "Pat"	82

SNIDOW	
Florence Eliza (J. T. S. Hoge)	126
John Chapman	
Snuffy's General Store	
SNYDER	······································
John William	114, 122
Minnie	•
William Ernest "Will" "Willie"	
Solitude (house)	
SOMERVILLE, Josephine John Anna (J. S. Battle)	
SPENCER	
Dr. John	83-4: 102: 110: 134
"Mrs. Dr."	
SPYKER, B. F.	
St. Mark's Lutheran Church, Prices Fork	
St. Michael's (Lutheran Church)	
St. Peter's Lutheran Church	
STANGER, Mary Henrietta (H. Price)	
STAPLES, Abram Penn	
STEELE, Roberta Ingles	
STEPHENSON, John	
STEWART	
J. Adger	62
Robert Armistead, Dr.	
William Henry, Col.	
STOCKARD	
Charles Rupert, Dr	112. 121. 122
May (F. D. Wilson)	
Richard Rupert	
Rosilie Otey "Rose" (T. B. Hutcheson Sr.)	
STONEMAN, Ernest "Pop"	
STUBBS, June N.	
Sunnyside Holiness Church	
SURFACE	
Adam	85
Andrew J. "Andy" "Old Andy"	
Ethel Virginia (C. H. Olinger)	•
Henry Raburn	
James Crockett "Jim"	
James Otey	
Malissia	
Nannie Lou (J. R. Long)	
Polly (H. D. Price)	
Sycamore Shoals, Tennessee	33

TALLANT	
Callie Hoge	127
Mrs.	
TARLETON, Banastre, Major	
TAYLOR	
Ann Barraud "Nancy" "Nannie" (J. P. Preston)	3 56 57 58 61 68
Franklin Minor	
Lewis	
Lucy (Mrs. Henry)	
TEMPLE, Henry Downing	
TERRILL, Dr. George	
THOM, James Alexander	
TOLBERT, Rebecca (W. H. Long)	
Trans-Allegheny Pioneers	
Trinity Episcopal Church, Portsmouth	115
TROLLINGER	
Henry C	102
William Hoge	
TUCK, William M., Governor	130
TUCKER, Rt. Rev. Beverley D. "Bishop"	90
TUTWILER, J. B. and Meta (Mrs. J. B.)	122-3
Tutwiler Hotel	
TYLER	
Belle Norwood (F. P. McConnell)	113
Eddie	
Eliza "Lily" (H. H. Wilson)	
Evelyn "Evie" (J. J. Miller)	
George	
Henry	
James Hoge	
James Hoge Jr. and Mrs.	
Julia Magruder	
· · ·	2, 03, 04-3, 100, 111
"Lily", see Eliza	110
Stockton Heth	
Tyler Memorial Presbyterian Church	101
	22
Underground Pub, Blacksburg	99
United	
Daughters of the Confederacy	
States Senate	22, 98
University of	
Leipzig	98
Mississippi	
Richmond	98
South Carolina	106
Virginia	98, 99, 106

VALENTINE, John	59
VANCE, Rupert	138
Vanderbilt University	103
Vicker Mill, Vicker's Switch railroad depot	
Virginia Gazette	
Virginia	
Agricultural Experiment Station	108
Agricultural and Mechanical College (V.A.M.C.)	113. 122-3
Corps of Cadets, V. P. I.	
Department of	
Agriculture and Immigration	117
Historic Resources	
General Assembly	•
Historical Society	
House of Delegates	
-Maryland Regional College of Veterinary Medicine	
Polytechnic Institute and State University	
65, 68, 103, 104, 113, 123	31, 32, 33, 30,
Tech, see Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University	
	120
Virginian Railroad	120
	01
VYULE, George Ben	01
WADDELL, William	20
WALKER, Charlie	
WALL	
Alexander Floyd	120
Frank	
George	
Guy Floyd	
Harriet "Hattie" (F. A. Guynn)	
Hattie	
James Lee	
Jamie Lee	
John	
Joseph A.	
Mr.	
Pharis	
William Franklin "Frank"	
WARE, Joseph F.	
Warren Manning Offices	
Washington County (Virginia) Historical Society Bulletin	
WASHINGTON, George	
Watauga (river)	
WEAVER	
WEDIN, Laura Jones	

WELLER, Jack	138
Westview Cemetery, Blacksburg	50
WHALING	
Fred	120, 121
John T	120
Mary Lewis (J. Buford)	120
WHARTON, Rev.	115
WHITAKER, Martha Jane (T. Pascoe)	109
White Thorn (house)	
William H. Ruffner Award, Virginia Tech	
William Preston Chapter of the NSDAR	
WILLIAMS	-
James, Brig. Gen'l	36
John Alexander	
WILLS, Wirt	
WILSON	•
Francis Daniel and Mrs 1	12, 122, 125
Henry Harrison	
WINN, Miss	
WINSTON, Col	
WITHROW, Mary (G.C. Bell)	
WOLF	
Jeff	07, 117, 124
Nannie	
Roy	
WOMBLE, Cornelia Frances (D. H. Hoge)	
WOOD, Ida (F. Jones)	
WORD	
Harry McClanahan	111
Mary Ann (Hinshelwood)	
WRAY, Sam	
WYSOR, Robert E., Col.	
Wysorton School, Dublin, Va	
Yellow Sulphur	109
YORK, Sergeant Alvin	137

## The Smithfield Review Volume VII, 2003

The Smithfield Review publishes book reviews. The editors plan for each issue to carry one to three reviews of books dealing with all periods of trans-Appalachian history and culture. We enlist active scholars and professionals to write the reviews. Review copies, requests to review books, and other inquiries may be addressed to:

Tom Costa, Book Review Editor
The Smithfield Review
Department of History and Philosophy
The University of Virginia's College at Wise
Wise, VA 24293

The Smithfield Review is published annually by the Montgomery County Branch of the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, Blacksburg, Virginia.

Subscriptions are \$10 per year, including tax; please add \$3.00 for shipping. Make checks payable to *The Smithfield Review*.

Proposals or manuscripts to be considered for publication are welcome. Please enclose a self-addressed, stamped envelope. Texts may be of varying length, but should ordinarily not exceed 8,000 words. Annotations should be collected as endnotes and should follow the *Chicago Manual of Style*, latest edition.

Please address all correspondence to:

The Smithfield Review 555 Edgewood Lane Blacksburg, VA 24060 ••• One Mrs. Inglis, who was taken Prisoner by the Shawanese when Col. Patton was killed, had made a wonderful Escape from the Lower Shanoe Town, and that she was fourteen Days in the Woods on her Way home, was naked all the Time, and lived on Chestnuts, &c.

— from The Pennsylvania Gazette, February 1756 (p. 12)

Jane Grace Preston, called "Janie" ... married Aubin Lee Boulware on 14 November 1878 at Smithfield. She was the mother of Janie Preston Boulware Lamb, who gave Smithfield to the APVA in 1959.

- Wirt Wills (p. 24)

The unerring aim of the mountain men with their long rifles, enhanced by their uphill firing trajectory from behind rocks and trees, as opposed to the more difficult down-hill trajectory faced by the Loyalist forces trapped on the mountain, had carried the day.

— Robertson and Stubbs (p. 36)

**F**amily history and legend has it that James Patton, uncle of William Preston, was buried 'at Smithfield' after he was killed at the Drapers Meadows Massacre on July 30, 1755.

— Laura Jones Wedin (p. 62)

Saturday, August 28 ... Rebecca, Hampton Hoge & the other two boys & myself drove to Lovers' Leap ...

— James Armistead Otey (p. 116)

Lovers' Leap is located off present McCoy Road and overlooks the New River. ... It was at Lovers' Leap that Confederate soldiers summarily tried and executed George P. Price for the murder of a Confederate spy named Craft.

— James Otey Hoge, Jr., (note 151, p. 117)

The Smithfield Review, Volume VII, 2003